

# This is The Meaning of Life

David Ramanauskas

Copyright © 2026 David Ramanauskas

All rights reserved.

**ISBN: 9798242678903**

## Jesus Christ

Jesus Christ was there at the beginning of Creation, and Jesus was with God, and Jesus was God. <sup>2</sup> The same Jesus Christ was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup> All things were made through Jesus. Without Jesus, nothing was made that has been made. <sup>4</sup> In Jesus was life, and the life was the light of men. <sup>5</sup> The light of Jesus shines in the darkness, and the darkness hasn't overcome it.

<sup>6</sup> There came a man sent from God, whose name was John (John the Baptist). <sup>7</sup> John came as a witness, that he might testify about the light of Jesus Christ, that all might believe through Jesus. <sup>8</sup> He was not the light, but was sent that he might testify about the light. <sup>9</sup> The true light of Jesus Christ that enlightens everyone was coming into the world.

<sup>10</sup> Jesus was in the world, and the world was made through him, and the world didn't recognize him. <sup>11</sup> Jesus came to his own, and those who were his own didn't receive him. <sup>12</sup> But as many as received Jesus Christ, to them he gave the right to become the Children of God, to those who believe in his name: <sup>13</sup> who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. John 1:1-14.

## CONTENTS

1	What is The Meaning of Life?	1
2	The Power and Presence of God	10
3	God of Heaven and Earth	61
4	God Reveals The Future	74
5	Evidence for God	119
6	The Holy Spirit of God	188
7	The Predetermined Plan of God	251
8	The Children of God	275
9	This is The Meaning of Your Life	300
	About the Author	312





Due to copyright restrictions of modern publications of the Holy Bible. All scriptures in this book have been originally taken from the copyright-free World English Bible. However, to give clarity to the reader many of the scriptures have been paraphrased. So, if you compare the scripture readings in this book with your own personal Bible, you may well find differences but the meaning should be the same.

This is The Meaning of Life







## 1. WHAT IS THE MEANING OF LIFE?

Dear Reader, in this book, I am not only going to answer the question. What is the meaning of life? But I am also going to provide rock-solid evidence that it is true!

I am seventy years old, and nearly fifty years ago I asked myself the same question, that millions of people ask at some point in their life – What is the meaning of life?

At the time of asking that question, I had spent four years in the Royal Navy, in the Fleet Air Arm, working as an electrical mechanic on Phantom fighter jets, on board the aircraft carrier HMS Ark Royal.

On leaving the navy, I began work as a postman delivering the mail in Huddersfield. After work, I would pop into a local pub for a pint of beer, and there I began reflecting on spiritual matters.

Although I was an atheist, I was beginning to lose faith in the theory of evolution. The idea that all forms of life, planet Earth and the universe extend into infinity. All began from absolutely nothing, and quite by chance, this nothing evolved into the physical universe. It just seemed like a ‘once upon a time’ fairy story.

So I began to consider the possibility of God. Also, if the Christians are right, then following death, we go to eternal life in heaven or the second death in hell. Then what is the purpose of life? What is the purpose of my life on Earth?

Because, as we live for such a very short time on Earth, compared with eternal life in heaven. There must be a very good reason why we are here on Earth. I came to the conclusion that if I lived my life of say 70-90 years and died. But only then discovered there was a plan and purpose to life on Earth. I would have been a fool not to

find out what it was.

As a result, I decided to find out. I decided that if there was a God of all creation out there, I was going to find God. And to celebrate that momentous decision, I had another pint of Yorkshire's finest ale!

My search for God, eventually led to my becoming a minister in the church, and it was through my studying the Christian Holy Bible that I discovered the many prophecies of God. It was these prophecies of God that not only proved God exists, but also proved the history of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God!

I also discovered God could communicate with us directly, or through our dreams, visions, angels, as well as through other Christians and the Holy Scriptures.

Over the years, I have had hundreds of the most amazing experiences of the reality, and the power and presence of God in my life, including when, at the age of sixty-seven, God healed me of pancreatic cancer without surgery or medical treatment.

So, what is the meaning of life?

Well, someone asked Jesus Christ what they had to do to inherit eternal life in heaven. And the answer was, the most important commandment of God, is that we shall love God with all our heart, mind, soul and strength, and to love one another as ourselves.

The reason for this, is that in heaven, everyone loves God with all their heart, mind. Soul and strength. Everyone lives their eternal life in the presence of God, and joyfully loves God in return, with all their heart, mind soul and strength. And everyone loves and cares for one another as they would do so for their loving family.

On planet Earth, we are born and grow into adults. Hopefully we are

born into a loving family, and at home and school, we should be taught about the evidence for God, how to experience the love, power and presence of God in our life, and how to love God and care for our fellow citizens of planet Earth.

As we go through life as adults, we are learning to live our life in preparation for eternal life in heaven.

The wonderful thing is that for those of us who chose to accept Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour. God gives us the right to become the Children of God.

In the Holy Bible, John begins his gospel with an important statement about Jesus Christ and our eternal destiny.

I have paraphrased the following scripture to give clarity for those of you who are not familiar with the Gospel of John.

*Jesus Christ was there at the beginning, and Jesus was with God, and Jesus was God.*

*<sup>2</sup> Jesus was at the very beginning of creation with God. <sup>3</sup> All things were made through Jesus, and without Jesus, nothing was made that has been made.*

*<sup>4</sup> In Jesus was life, and the life was the light of humankind. <sup>5</sup> The light of Jesus shines in the darkness, and the darkness of evil has not overcome the light.*

*<sup>6</sup> There was a man chosen by God, whose name was John (John the Baptist). <sup>7</sup> John was sent as a witness, that he might testify about the light of Jesus Christ, that all might believe through Jesus. <sup>8</sup> John was not the light but was sent that he might testify about the light of Jesus Christ.*

*<sup>9</sup> The true light of Jesus Christ that enlightens all humankind was coming into the world.*

*<sup>10</sup> Jesus was in the world, and the world was made through him, but the world didn't recognise Jesus as the Christ (the anointed one of God). <sup>11</sup> Jesus came to his own people (the Jews), but they didn't accept Jesus.*

*<sup>12</sup> But to all who did accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, to them Jesus gave the right to become the Children of God, to those who believe in his name.*

*And those who became the Children of God, were not born of blood, nor the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. John 1:1-13.*

The amazing thing is that we don't have to wait until we die and enter heaven to become Children of God. The predetermined plan and purpose of God, is for us to become children of God right here and now!

**This is the meaning of life, to live our lives on Earth as the Children of God, in preparation for eternal life in heaven.**

For those who don't want to live their life on Earth believing, trusting and obeying the commandments of God, and living as Children of God. It's not compulsory, but at the end of your life here on Earth, you have, by your own actions, excluded yourself from your eternal destiny in heaven and face the second death.

So, as the title of this book is called – **This is The Meaning of Life.** As you read through the book, please keep in mind, God's predetermined plan and purpose for your life here on Earth. **It is to live your life as a Child of God, believing, obeying, and trusting in Jesus Christ as your Lord and Saviour, until you enter God's kingdom of heaven.**

Over the following pages of this book, I will provide the evidence for God, and the meaning of life. And I will share how you can become a Child of God, and begin your journey through life (no

matter how old or young you might be), living life as a Child of God.

In Chapter 2. The Power and Presence of God I will share my experience of learning to live in the power and presence of God. How God can speak to His children, directly, through our dreams, visions, other Christians, and through the scriptures. And the miracles of healing in Jesus' name today, just as they were 2,000 years ago.

In Chapter 3. God of Heaven and Earth. You may be surprised to discover the growing number of scientists around the world. Who no longer believe the science supports the theory of evolution, but in fact supports a reality of creation by intelligent design.

In Chapter 4. God Reveals The Future. One of the most exciting things I discovered about God, was the amazing prophecies of God in the Holy Bible. Prophecies made by God and fulfilled hundreds, even thousands of years into the future (even fulfilled in modern history). And, due to the unique way in which the Holy Bible came into being. It becomes obvious it would have been impossible for anyone to have inserted the prophecies after the event.

These prophecies of God prove God is real. They also prove the history of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God – even though the forces of darkness and evil people on Earth have tried their best to defeat the plans of God.

It is the prophecies (promises) of God. Together with the personal experience of God, as we live our life in the power and presence of God, as a child of God. That proves God is real, and that God's predetermined plan and purpose for our life is also real.

In Chapter 5. Evidence for God. This chapter contains the Gospel

of Luke from the Holy Bible, because I want you to know, what God wants you to know about Jesus Christ. And you will read the very words spoken by Jesus Christ (who is God), which are printed in red type.

You will read the words God has spoken through His Christ, the truth about your eternal destiny as a child of God.

In Chapter 6. The Holy Spirit of God. This chapter contains Luke's second letter and is a continuation of his Gospel. It tells of how the power and presence of God came upon the followers of Jesus Christ, and the beginnings of the church 2,000 years ago. When you read of the power and presence of God among the children of God 2,000 years ago. You will understand why and how the power and presence of God through the Holy Spirit of God is still with us now. And how, (as I mentioned in Chapter 1), the Holy Spirit of God is at work in the lives of the Children of God today.

In Chapter 7. The Predetermined Plan of God. In this chapter, I have included more of the prophecies and promises of God. Prophecies from the beginning of creation to our present day, and into the future and the return of our Lord Jesus Christ.

In Chapter 8. The Children of God. I have mentioned the greatest commandment of God, it that we are to love God with all our heart, mind, soul and strength. But how can we love someone we don't know? We can't. Thank God for the Holy Bible, because it was written to prove God is real, and that whatever God says will happen, will happen exactly the way God says it will happen. But it was written so that we, as children of God, may come to learn and experience the love God has for us. And when we come to understand just how far from God we have lived our lives without



God, and the sacrificial death of Jesus on the cross 2,000 years ago was made for us. A sacrifice of God that allowed us to become children of God. When we come to understand that through this sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross, God offers everyone the gift of eternal life as a child of God. Then we cannot be anything but grateful to God. We begin by learning about God through Jesus Christ, we become grateful for what Jesus did for us. In our deep, deep gratitude, we want to do something in return, and we become willing, cheerful disciples of Christ. And the more we live in the power and presence of God, the closer we feel to God and the more we feel God's love for us, and in return, our love for God just grows and grows.

In Chapter 9. This is The Meaning of Your Life. In this chapter, I will go through some of the practical steps for you to begin your journey as a Child of God.

Three years ago, at the age of sixty-seven, the doctors diagnosed me with pancreatic cancer, and put me on the NHS fast-track system for surgery. I looked like death, I felt like death, and by Christmas Day 2022, I was very frail, and hoping I could get to church and receive Holy Communion, without starting with the shakes, which I had started to experience over the last few days.

Everyone who saw me expected me to die, my youngest son was planning my eulogy, and my dear wife Rosemary was planning to return to her family in Ireland following the funeral.

But, when I had been diagnosed with cancer, I asked God, am I going to die. And God told me three things.

I healed you before and will heal you again.

Now is the time to begin your ministry.

Psalm 118:17 I shall not die, but live and declare the works of the Lord.

So, I asked God for something. I said to God that I would be very grateful if, through the skill of the surgeon, He would get me through. But instead, I wanted God to heal me without surgery or any medical treatment of any kind. I wanted my testimony to be – God said He would heal me, and without any surgery or medical treatment, God healed me.

So, I told everyone, don't worry God is going to heal me. But everyone thought I was deluded.

By Christmas Day, I was wondering just how close to death God was going to allow me to experience before healing me. Because I didn't think I could get any weaker without taking to my deathbed!

However, a week into the New Year, little by little I began to recover. Then at the end of January, the surgeon phoned me and asked me how I was feeling. Thankfully, though I was not 100%, I was feeling much better. Then the surgeon said, I have your latest scans and blood results. You're completely clear, you don't have cancer. He had no idea how or why I got better, because in all the time since I was diagnosed with cancer, I never received any medical treatment, and thankfully, I didn't need surgery. God told me He would heal me, and He did. Praise the Lord!

Recently, an atheist told me that he didn't believe in God and that it was my positive mental attitude that healed me. I said that at the age of sixty-seven, if you get pancreatic cancer, then a positive mental attitude will help you, but you're still going to die.

Then he said, the doctors must have misdiagnosed your condition.

Well, it wasn't just one doctor, it was a decision by a group of doctors. Also, when I returned to see a doctor for some minor ailments over the past couple of years. They are amazed when I told them I haven't had surgery or any medical treatment, because without it they knew I would have died quite quickly.

My reply was that if my being healed of pancreatic cancer was the only miracle of God I had experienced in my life, then I might be tempted to believe the doctors had misdiagnosed me.

But in fact, I have experienced hundreds of miracles of God, as I have lived my life as a child of God, living life in the love, power and presence of God. And when God told me He would heal me, I knew God would heal me, because I knew I could always trust in the prophecies and promises of God. Amen.

The reason you are reading this book right now, is because of the fulfilment of the prophecy of God over my life. That I shall not die but live and declare the works of the Lord – the wonderful works of the Lord!

This is why I produced this eBook – This is The Meaning of Life, and my prayer for you is that you will experience the love, power and presence of God. As you fulfil God's predetermined plan and purpose for your life as a child of God here on Earth.

Yours in Christ.

David Ramanauskas.

## 2. THE POWER AND PRESENCE OF GOD

In this chapter, The Power and Presence of God. I am going to share with you how I first experienced the reality of the power and presence of God, and how you also can learn to experience the love, power and presence of God in your daily life. The reason I am confident that anyone can learn to experience these things, is because I know of others who also learned how to experience the reality of God in their life. Also, I have spent many years helping others make a special connection with God, through my Listening to God meetings in Church.

As you read through the following pages of this book, you will discover this is how the first followers of Jesus Christ lived their lives, in the power and presence of God. Then when Jesus Christ was crucified, died, raised from the dead and ascended into heaven. The power and presence of God never left them but continued down through the generations to our present day.

Living your life as a Child of God, in the power and presence of God, is how all Christians should live their lives. Just as the followers of Jesus Christ did 2,000 years ago. This power and presence of God was experienced in their lives through miracles of healing and other miracles, and of God speaking to his people directly or through angels or their dreams and visions.

All of this is part of God's predetermined plan and purpose of God, brought to us through Jesus Christ. 2,000 years ago, people's lives were totally transformed by Jesus

Christ and the power of the Holy Spirit. First, by the physical presence of Jesus Christ and His disciples while Jesus was still with them. Then, through the Holy Spirit and the disciples and followers of Jesus Christ, and later through the Holy Spirit and followers of Jesus Christ, which has continued to the present day.

God is still changing people's lives today, exactly as He was 2,000 years ago. God's mission of salvation for humankind never came to an end. In every generation, the good news of salvation through Jesus Christ is to be proclaimed to all nations, and the power and presence of God to be experienced by all nations.

The same Holy Spirit of God is at work, the angels of God are still at work, and the followers of Jesus Christ are still working and serving God with the love, joy, peace, and power of God in their lives. All this is happening all over the world today. Exactly in fulfilment of the prophecies and promises of God. Exactly according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God. That not only proves God exists, but also proves that since the beginning of creation, the history

of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

This same power and presence of God is available to us today through God our Father, God the Son Jesus Christ, and God the Holy Spirit. The amazing evidence for God today of people healed in the name of Jesus, and evidence of how we can learn how to communicate with God. Also, I want to share with you how you can learn about the divine healing ministry and learn how to

communicate with God.

So, I would like to share with you my journey from atheist to Christian. How I discovered the gateway to miracles of healing and communication with God. The gateway to experiencing the power and presence of God in my life. A gateway that God opens for all who receive Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour and who want to live their lives in the service of God and live their lives in the power and presence of God.

As a baby, I was baptized into the Catholic faith and then attended a Methodist Sunday School up to the age of ten. At that time, I had no interest in God, found church boring, and believed what others had told me. That it was impossible for God to exist otherwise he would have put an end to all the wars, starvation, suffering and evil in the world.

The years I spent in high school in the Religious Education Classes made no impact on me at all. No one ever told us about the irrefutable evidence for God. No one ever told us it was possible to experience the reality of the love, power and presence of God in our lives. And no one told us that the meaning and purpose of our short human life on Earth, is to prepare us for eternal life in heaven!

If they had done so, I would have been very interested in learning about the evidence for God, and how to experience these things of God in my life. But because we were never taught these things, I, like many of my friends, had no interest in God or religion. I was probably the most disinterested child in class, and if anyone had told

her that one day David Ramanauskas is going to write a book – This is The Meaning of Life, about the evidence for God and how to experience the power and presence of God, I think she would have fainted with shock.

I left school and joined the Royal Navy as part of the Fleet Air Arm, working on HMS Ark Royal as an electrical mechanic on Phantom jets. By this time, I felt people who believed in God were deluded, after all, I thought no one could prove that God existed, could they? However, as I sailed around the world, I met people who seemed perfectly normal and sincerely believed in God. I also witnessed the amazing stars at night where night was almost as light as day with the sky crammed full of bright shining stars. Back home in Yorkshire with all the clouds at night, you are lucky to see twenty stars in the sky. Sometimes I would contemplate the meaning of life, the beautiful stars at night and Darwin's theory of evolution. This usually happened when I was in a pub and having a beer or two.

A few years later, I had left the Navy and was working as a postman, and before taking the bus home, I called into a pub for a beer and again turned my thoughts towards the meaning of life. The more I thought about Darwin's theory of evolution that the whole universe and beyond was created out of nothing, the more I found it difficult to believe, and finally, I found it impossible to believe.

So, then I asked myself if there really was a God of all creation, then how could I discover if it was true? If God had created everything, including human life. If there really was life after death. If there

really was a plan and purpose in life, how could I discover the truth?

It seemed reasonable to me that if there was a God, and he wanted humankind to know of his existence, of our plan and purpose in life, and what we needed to do to ensure we went to heaven when we died (instead of the other place). I am sure that God would have provided a way for us to discover the truth. So, I concluded that if I lived my life without trying to discover the truth and then died. And only then discovered there is a God and there is life after death, but that I had failed to follow God's plan for my life and God would not allow me into his heaven. Then I would only have myself to blame for my stupidity.

And so, I came to the decision, that if God was out there somewhere, I was going to find him. And to celebrate that momentous decision in my life, I celebrated with another pint of beer!

I began my search by looking at all the main different religions, all except Christianity. That was because I thought I knew everything I needed to know about that from Sunday School and high school. After about eighteen months I became convinced that God did exist, but this God seemed a billion light years away and had no concern for me. But then I was watching the local news on TV, and they were interviewing a church of England bishop. He talked about how he became a Christian, and how reading the Bible as an adult meant far more to him

than as a child at school. He said he became fascinated by the person of Jesus Christ, and it changed his life forever. Well, I had no interest in becoming a bishop! But I was interested in God. I went out and



bought a Good News Holy Bible, and I did what the bishop recommended. He said don't start at the first page of the book as though reading a novel. Instead, turn to the Gospel of Matthew, and read through the four Gospels before continuing to the end of the book. Then you can go back to the first page and read through the Bible again. He said this way you will learn about Jesus Christ, and that will make the whole Bible make more sense. So, I read through the Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John and as I did so I discovered God who instead of being billions of miles

away, was close, very close. And I discovered that God loved and cared about me! It was a shock.

I continued reading through to the end of the Bible, and then I turned to the first page of the Bible and began reading through the Old Testament. But by this time, I was so captivated by this person Jesus Christ, that I decided if there was only one person in the history of the world worth following, then Jesus Christ is the one to follow. For it is through Jesus Christ that we can make that connection with God.

I then decided to become a follower of Jesus Christ, to join a church and do the things Christians do, like go to church on a Sunday morning and learn more about Jesus Christ and the Lord God of all creation. And I was very happy with my decision. I joined a Church of England church, went to church on Sundays, got confirmed and continued to read books and learn more about the Christian faith.

Then, many years later, on Pentecost Sunday 1999, my life changed forever, for the better. Pentecost is a Christian celebration of God's

gift of the Holy Spirit of God to his people, which happened 2,000 years ago following Jesus' ascension into heaven. It is the Holy Spirit of God that enables us to live in the power and presence of God.

So, on Pentecost Sunday 1999 my wife and I attended the Sunday morning service, and as usual, there was also an evening celebration service for Pentecost Sunday. Now, at that time, the church we attended was a traditional evangelical Church of England church. We never experienced any miracles of healing or prophecies. But very occasionally, someone might feel God had been speaking to them with a message for the congregation, and they would share this with the vicar who would then share it with the church.

But as I walked through the door of the church, what I expected was to enjoy a lovely uplifting service, sing some beautiful songs of praise, listen to an enjoyable sermon, and then have coffee, cake and a chat with my friends. What I didn't expect was to have a supernatural encounter with angels and with God.

Before the service began, the vicar (Tim) told everyone that at the end of the service, there would be an opportunity to receive prayer. Those wanting to be prayed for would come and kneel at the altar rail, and he would pray for them. I thought to myself, well I hope you don't expect to see me coming for prayer because I don't need it! Then to my surprise, I heard a voice say "You should go for prayer, David". But this voice wasn't from anyone near me; it was like a voice

in my head! And so I thought no, I am not going for prayer. But the

voice continued, and other voices joined in – "Yes, you should go forward to receive prayer, David".

The voices continued all through the service encouraging me to go forward for prayer, and all the time I was saying no! But the extraordinary thing was that each time I got up to sing, I was struck dumb! I didn't feel emotional, but I couldn't sing or talk or make any sound at all. During the hymns the voices would stop, only to start again when the hymn had finished. I looked around the church, everyone looked ok, but I felt under great pressure. I was holding the pew seat with both of my hands, as though if I let go I would be flung forward to the altar rail.

At the end of the service, all the voices stopped, and I heard another voice from the front of the church, it wasn't the vicar, it was God. God said to me "Come, come." At that point, I felt I couldn't hold back any longer, and I said "Yes." I went forward and knelt at the altar rail, and Tim prayed for me.

I had no idea what he said, but it felt as though Jesus Christ himself was praying for me. After a few minutes of prayer, I walked into a side chapel and sat down. I felt as though I was trembling all over. I held out my hands in front of me and was surprised to see they were perfectly still, as I thought they would be shaking. It is difficult to explain how I felt, I was in shock, and I thought to myself, I hope this doesn't happen again next week, because if it does, I am never coming back to church again! This was not some wonderful mystical experience I wanted ever again.

Eventually, I returned to my seat and began to reason with myself that I had been working very hard recently, too hard, and now I was experiencing some kind of mental breakdown. I didn't tell anyone about my experience, and over the following months the breakdown I thought I was going to have never happened! This event made me think about the times in the Holy Bible when God sent His angels to His people with a message, and they were shocked or even struck dumb by the angel.

This experience of angels encouraging me to go for prayer, of God speaking to me and Jesus Christ praying for me, led me to consider what I was doing in my life for God. I began to pray daily, asking God for direction. What did He want me to do with my life? How did He want me to serve Him? This was a prayer that I had to have an answer from God. I then began looking at the various ways in which I could serve God.

One morning I awoke and realised I had had a bizarre dream. I never remember my dreams when I wake, but this time in my dream, I was in church, standing in the pulpit delivering a sermon. Now, for me, that was a weird dream. The following morning, I awoke to find I had the same dream! What a coincidence! The following morning, I awoke to realise that I now had the identical dream three nights in a row. That's when I began to recall the times in the Holy Bible when God had spoken to His people through their dreams. I had been asking God for direction, and this is how He answered my prayer through my dreams!

I decided to go and have a chat with my vicar, Tim, and later that year, I began training as a minister in the Church of England.

A few years later, God answered my prayers most unusually and supernaturally. I felt that God wanted me to set up a bookstall selling second-hand Christian books, at the Saturday market in the Halifax Piece Hall. So, I set up the bookstall, and eighteen months later, I was considering making some changes and doing things differently, so I began to pray to God for an answer. What should I do? What should I change? One Friday, I went to the Piece Hall and walked around it, praying as I went asking God for direction. I walked around the balcony, praying for an answer.

The following morning, God answered my prayer supernaturally. This time God didn't speak to me through angels or my dreams, God sent someone to me who I

had never met before. A lady came to my bookstall and said, "I have a message from God for you, I don't know what it means, but God said to Stand Fast." I must say I was shocked. I had never experienced anything like this before. I thanked the lady, and off she went. Then I remembered the times in the Holy Bible when God had spoken to His people in the same way, by sending someone else to them with a message and answer to their prayers. To me, I felt the words from God to Stand Fast meant that I shouldn't change anything, just keep everything as it was. And that's what I did until God told me to do something new.

It was then that I realised that God had spoken to me directly, through his angels and now through another Christian. It reminded me of the times in the Bible when God had spoken to his people through dreams, visions, angelic visitations and by speaking directly to them. I decided that I wanted to learn how to hear from God,

whenever God wanted to speak to me, both for myself and for others. So, I began reading books and watching DVDs on the subject to learn as much as I could.

I had been reading a book by Mark Stibbe called Prophetic Evangelism, and it shared how some Christians were able to hear from God quite easily for others. Just like the lady who came to my bookstall with a message from God for me. Reading the book made me want to discover if someone could learn how to receive a message from God for another person. God can, of course, speak to us as we read the Holy Bible, through worship, or through listening to a sermon or other Christian teaching.

By this time, I had given hundreds of sermons, and always began my preparation to write a sermon by asking God to guide my thoughts and words. But there is something very special about receiving a word or a message from God through another Christian. It is supernatural, wonderful, encouraging, and uplifting. Often it can be very powerful, convincing people of the reality and power of God on earth.

In the same way that I received inspiration from God in writing my sermons, I wanted God to speak to me directly with a message for individuals. I wanted God to give me a message that would encourage someone, or bring comfort and healing, a message of hope for the future, a message that would build their faith in God.

I read lots of books on the subject, but I felt I needed some practical help and direction. I searched the internet looking for Christian

organisations that could help and came across Marketplace Ministries in Totnes. This ministry is led by Lindy Strong, and she was just starting an online course enabling people to listen and receive from God, and it was free!

I followed the course for some eighteen months and then set up a group of about ten members of our church to meet every week to listen to God. We called it the Listening to God meeting! Unlike the usual prayer meetings where people sit together and offer up prayers to God, we would say a short prayer inviting God

to speak to us and then sit in silence for twenty minutes. We would make a note of anything we felt God was saying to us personally or to others, and then at the end of the twenty minutes, we would share what we had received.

I knew from personal experience that God could speak to us through our dreams, so as well as listening to God, we would spend some time asking God to interpret the meaning of our dreams. After a few months, our interest in dream interpretation began to fall. So during one meeting, I said that we needed to get serious about dream interpretation because God had told me He was going to use dream interpretation in bringing people to our church.

The following Sunday, a lady came to our church for the first time in fifteen years. She used to go to church every week but had fallen out with God and so stopped going to church. But on this Sunday, she came to church because she had a very disturbing dream. I asked her about the dream, and I said: "Well you don't have to be a dream interpretation expert to know the meaning of your dream is that God

wants you back". She replied, "I know, that's why I am here". This is a good example of why Christians should learn how to listen to God and learn how to interpret dreams from God. By doing so, we are allowing God to communicate with people through their dreams, and supernaturally provide evidence that God exists and cares about us.

Have you ever considered changing your job? It's a big decision to make, which job to apply for, or should you go or stay in the same job? It would be good if you could get some divine direction, a word from God indicating the best way forward. Well, God gave me the direction through three identical dreams, which led me to become a Lay Reader in our church. God can also speak to us through another Christian who listens to God.

A friend of mine was telling me of his stress about his employment, and as he knew I could receive a word from God, I asked him if he wanted me to ask God for him. He agreed, and I closed my eyes and invited God to speak to me for my friend. As I was receiving from God, a thought came into my mind that perhaps my friend would wonder if what I was going to share with him really was from God, or just something out of my imagination. Then God showed me a picture

of an eagle. I then shared with my friend what God had shown me, and also told him that he might be a little sceptical as to whether the message was from God, or had I just made it up? I told him God had shown me the picture of an eagle. He admitted that he was impressed with my message from God for him, and he was indeed a little sceptical – until I told him about the picture of an eagle. He then told me that he often thought of himself as an eagle! Or to be more



precise the character of an eagle. So, my picture of the eagle was significant to him, evidence to him that I hadn't imagined my message from God, and he felt it was genuine.

A man came for prayer, and as my friend was praying for him, I asked God to give me something for him. I had a picture of a sink, and underneath the sink, a metal pipe shone bright silver. I felt God say to me to ask the man if he was a plumber. I thought to myself that I was certain he wasn't a plumber and so I was not going to ask the question, but God persisted in telling me to ask. I was still convinced he wasn't a plumber, and so I said to him "You're not a plumber, are you?" To which he replied "No". I was just about to tell God smugly – "I told you so!" when he continued "But it is funny you should mention my being a plumber because yesterday I met a friend who I had not seen in years, and he was a plumber and doing well for himself. He was also encouraging me to become a plumber, and I have been giving it some serious thought." I shared the picture I had received for him and what God had told me to ask him. I also said that under the circumstances, I felt God was encouraging him to start a new career in plumbing.

I was once on a weekend spiritual retreat to Lindisfarne (Holy Island). There were twelve of us, and I decided to ask God for a word or message for each person. So, at breakfast, I handed out the messages to each one, including someone from another church whom I had never met before.

The following morning, he sat beside me at breakfast and said, "You have never met me before and don't know anything about me, but the message you gave me was exactly what my friends have been

telling me for months.” The message from God that I had written down for him was – You think you have retired, but God

has one more mission for you yet. I had no idea that he had retired, and was surprised when he told me that he had been a missionary, and all his friends had said he had one more mission from God to fulfil. A few years later I discovered he had returned to his work and completed his one-more-mission-for-God.

A young man came to our Listening to God meeting, it was his first time and was expecting the usual sort of Christian prayer meeting. I asked God to give me something for him, and afterwards told him how I had seen a picture of a workshop, and the focus was on a rack of wood chisels on the wall. The thing I noticed about these chisels was that they had different shaped blades to cut the wood, and they were designed for very fine and delicate cutting of the wood that would be used by a craftsman. He was very surprised for me to see this, as no one there knew anything about him or his work, and his work involved using the very chisels I described!

One time I was leading our Listening to God meeting, and as we sat quietly with our eyes closed I heard someone enter the room. I didn't hear them sit down, and so I opened my eyes to see who it was. I had never met this person before, but he was standing with his hands above his head, with his eyes closed as though he was praising God. Later he told me that when he came in, he had a vision of angels ascending and descending from heaven into our room. I rather nonchalantly said, “Oh, the angels, yes they're always around here!” I have never seen an angel, but others in our Listening to God meeting have seen them or had visions, or been aware of their presence.

I was in church one Sunday, and I asked God to give me a message for someone. As I looked around the church, I noticed my friend whose mother was coming to the end of her life. I knew he must be going through a tough time, so I asked God to give me something, some message that would be of comfort. I closed my eyes and immediately saw a picture of a small brown dog. I asked God what the picture

meant but didn't receive any reply. So, I said to God that the picture didn't make any sense to me and that my friend was going through a really tough time, and would He please give me something that would comfort my friend?

I got the same picture of a small brown dog, and I was annoyed. I had spent years learning how to receive a message from God, so that I could receive a word from God for those in need. The picture of the small brown dog didn't make any sense to me, and I didn't think it would comfort my friend, so I decided not to share it with my friend.

At four o'clock in the morning, God woke me up and said, "Now David, about that picture of a small brown dog." A couple of hours later I sent my friend an email and told him what I had received from God for him. The following Sunday, my friend told me that he had been to see his mother in the hospital and on the way picked up his sister. He told her about the picture from God about the small brown dog. She then told him that she had been shopping and bought something for their mum to comfort her while they were not with her. She opened her bag, and there was a small brown (toy) dog! Well, the small brown dog, brought comfort to their mum, and the

picture that God gave me of a small brown dog, brought comfort to my friend and his sister. My friend even spoke about it at his mother's funeral.

When we are going through difficult times in life, we may think that God doesn't exist, or perhaps He doesn't know or care about us. But the reality is that God knows all about you, and He loves you and cares about you. At this moment in time, particularly if you have been bereaved, you may be angry with God. You may question why God allowed your loved one to die. Or why God didn't answer your prayers, or why God didn't send someone to you with a message to comfort you. Sadly, there are very few Christians who listen to God for themselves or others, but it is something that every Christian can learn to develop if they want to. Being able to receive from God in this way is something that you can learn to do if you wish, and later in this book, I will share with you exactly how to hear from God for yourself and others. This is real evidence for God and eternal life that you can communicate directly with God.

A few years ago, I attended a School of The Supernatural, run by Lindy Strong and her team in Totnes. While I was there, the team members prayed for me, and they prophesied over me. Part of what they said was that I would be involved in the healing ministry and also the deliverance ministry (casting out demons). Whilst I was grateful for their prayers and words from God for me, I didn't take too seriously their words about my being in the healing ministry or the deliverance ministry. When it came to divine healing, I had read about the minister David Hathaway who used to be a minister in Dewsbury but had since

developed an incredible healing and evangelistic ministry,

preaching to thousands in the countries who were previously in the USSR (Russia).

I had been praying to God for years that God would send someone to our church with the gift of healing, because there were plenty of people in need. As for the deliverance ministry, I thought that would be impossible, because in the Church of England, only those specifically appointed by the bishop can perform an exorcism (casting out demons), and I was certain I was not going to be one of the chosen ones to perform this duty for the bishop.

Then one day during my quiet time alone with God, God told me He was going to begin healing people in our church. This was amazing news because in the 160-year history of our church, I never heard of any miracle of healing taking place. But God also told me that He wanted me to tell people in our church that He was going to start healing people. So, I did, and I received a mixed response. Some were delighted, and others were very sceptical, and I am sure some must have thought David was going nuts!

At that time, I didn't know how God would start healing people, I assumed that God would heal them during the Sunday morning service. We also had a prayer team who would offer healing prayers after the service, and though we had never witnessed a dramatic miracle of healing, I thought perhaps God might begin healing during this time. Months passed by and nothing happened – we prayed as

usual, but no one was healed.

After about six months, I began to feel a bit uneasy about this. Had I been mistaken in hearing from God about healing? Was I now going to look like an idiot for telling everyone God was going to heal, and everyone would know I was wrong? At that point, it suddenly dawned on me that while I was waiting for God to do something, God was perhaps waiting for me to do something! So, I decided to do some research on divine healing and bought lots of books and DVDs on the

subject by those who had recognised healing ministries.

These include information from Joan Hunter, T.L. Osborn, David Hathaway, Peter Horrobin, Ian Andrews, Smith Wigglesworth, David Pytches, Trevor Dearing, and others.

Also, during my studies, I made an interesting discovery. When we prayed for someone to be healed in our church, we would ask God to heal them. We would pray something like this - 'If it is Your will Lord, for them to be healed, then let them be healed.' I discovered that when those with the recognised healing ministries prayed for an individual, they didn't ask God to heal the person, or ask if it was the will of God for them to be healed. They assumed it was the will of

God for them to be healed, and they commanded pain to leave the body, and or commanded healing in the name of Jesus Christ. I shared this information with our prayer team, and we began to pray in this way. Suddenly we had a breakthrough in divine healing in our church, and we began to see people dramatically and immediately healed by God. This was now about nine months after God had told me He was going to start healing people in our church.

As you will read in the following chapters of this book, this act of God telling His

people that He is going to do something in the future is called prophecy. You will read of some of the important prophecies of God, which have taken hundreds and even thousands of years to be fulfilled. But God is also interested in proclaiming prophecies for His people that are fulfilled almost immediately or within a short period of time.

God had told me He was going to start healing people in our church. Then He told me to tell everyone else in our church that He was going to start healing. Then He began healing just as He said he would do. This was (for me) the irrefutable evidence for God, that God speaks, God communicates, God foretells, and God heals today, just as He has done for the past two thousand years – all in the name of Jesus Christ. This same evidence is available for other Christians in other churches, (there is nothing special about David Ramanauskas!)

One Pentecost Sunday, I was to lead the service and deliver the sermon. A couple of months beforehand, God had told me that if I were to say a particular healing prayer during the service, then God would heal people. A couple of weeks before the service I received more detailed instructions from God. God told me that during my sermon I was to speak about divine healing, and then ask everyone to

stand up and move around to be fully aware of any physical pain they may have. Next, they should sit down, and I would say the healing prayer. Then we were to listen to a quiet piece of music as God would heal. Then everyone had to stand again and notice if

there was any healing or reduction in pain.

The only problem I could see was that before we did this God wanted me to explain what was going to happen, and that God would heal people. So, I asked God what would happen if I did exactly as He told me, but nobody got healed. It seemed to me a reasonable question to ask. But instead of God reassuring me that everything was going to be ok, God said to me “Have I ever let you down, David?” Three times God asked me the same question, and three times I replied, “No, you have never let me down”. Then God asked me “Have you ever let me down, David?” To which I responded, “Oh yes, lots of times, let's change the subject!”

Pentecost Sunday arrived and everything went according to plan, but following my saying the healing prayer, during the quiet music, I was praying quietly, pleading with God to heal someone, anyone, of anything, even dandruff! Well, five people received healing at that time, and another two were healed later that day. Praise the Lord!

On another occasion, I was due to lead a service in church, and God reminded me of a supernatural event in the Bible, where Jesus healed a man. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.<sup>3</sup> In these lay a great multitude of disabled, of blind, sick, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.<sup>4</sup> For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and stirred the water, whosoever then first after the stirring of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatever disease he had. John 5:2-4. (c. 30 AD).

I felt God say to me that during the service He wanted me to stir the



waters, and someone would get healed. So, during the sermon, I told the congregation what God had shown me. I asked them to close their eyes and imagine sitting by the pool in Bethesda. Then imagine the water being stirred by an angel and them stepping into the pool for healing. One of the musicians then played a soft piece of music for a few minutes as I walked around the church praying softly in tongues.

As I was walking and praying in tongues, I noticed a couple who had not been to our church before. I thought they would think I was mad! Anyway, I continued walking and praying in tongues. Then when the music stopped, I asked the congregation if anyone felt they had been healed. One person shared a supernatural experience they had during the prayer, and another said they had a bad back in constant pain, but as soon as I began praying, the pain immediately left their body. It was the only healing, and I had expected more until God reminded me that it was the first in the pool that got healed. The reason I mention this healing, is because sometimes God asks us to do things that might seem foolish, but if someone gets healed and people see the power and presence of God, then why should I care if I look foolish?

On one occasion I was out walking, and the thought came into my mind about the time at Marketplace Ministries, when the team prayed for me and prophesied that I would be involved in the deliverance ministry of casting out demons. It just seemed impossible with my being a member of the Church of England, as I was unlikely to be approved by the bishop for this ministry. However, I am involved in the healing ministry outside of the C of E, and so I asked God if I was going to be involved in the deliverance ministry. As soon as I asked the question, I noticed a leaflet on the

floor. It was a discarded leaflet from a DVD. A picture of a row of bloody skulls, and the headline about - *Films That Terrified Audiences Around The World!* This told me the film was about the demonic! Was this just a coincidence or was God preparing me for something? Later that week, I had my

answer when I was part of a healing prayer team called to pray for someone who was afflicted by the demonic. They were, of course, delivered and healed in Jesus' name, for the light of Christ is greater than the darkness in the world.

All the healings I have witnessed and prayed for were declared in the name of Jesus Christ. Also, when it comes to healing prayer, I don't pray for someone to be healed on my own, I think it is far better for two or three, or more Christians to pray for a person to be healed. In this way, the person who receives the healing does not inflate the ego of the person who prayed for them, but gives the praise where it is deserved, to Jesus Christ our Lord and Saviour.

One of the first miracles of healing I witnessed in our church, was when a lady came for healing prayer for her knee. She was limping badly and in terrible constant pain. Three of us prayed for her, and after a short prayer casting out the pain and for healing in Jesus' name, she was healed, and walked away normally without pain and a big smile on her face!

Sometimes we had such success witnessing healing for people in pain. Before praying with them I would ask them two questions: Is the pain constant or does it come and go? On a scale of 1 to 10, how bad is the pain? Then as we prayed for healing, we would ask them

about the level of pain. It was wonderful to see as we prayed the pain lessening until it finally left them pain-free.

A young man came for healing prayer about his leg. He had been a drug user and was injecting into his leg. The leg looked grey and he told us he was in pain as he walked. We cast out the pain and called for healing in Jesus' name. He then went down on his knees and began springing up and down on his knees. I asked him if he was alright! He replied that he was and that he could never have done that before (springing up and down on his knees) without being in severe pain.

One man came for healing prayer for his knee. It was just after the Sunday morning service as most people were having a cup of coffee and a chat. He told us he was going for a cortisone injection in his knee the following day, but the pain was so bad he would be grateful if we could do anything for him. We said a very short prayer commanding the pain to go and for healing in Jesus' name. He was surprised at our short prayer and asked. "Is that it?" I think he was expecting a much longer prayer! However, the pain had completely left his knee. He still had his injection the following day as he wasn't taking any chance the pain would return.

I was once leading a Healing Service, and I noticed four people who were visiting from another church. So, I asked God to give me a message for each of them. During the service, I shared the message from God for each one, and after the service three of them told me they felt the message was definitely from God. The fourth person, the message from God was "I will give strength to your leg, says the Lord". It seemed a bit peculiar to me, but then he told me he had

terrible pain in his foot and could not walk without limping. We prayed for him at the end of the service and he walked out, limp-free!

Have you ever experienced problems with friends or neighbours? Someone came for prayer, who was suffering terrible problems from a person who was their so-called friend but turned out to be a real problem. So, I prayed the 'Get God or Go' prayer. We prayed God's blessing on the person who was causing a problem, and for the problem to come to an end. But if the person was unwilling to stop being a problem, we prayed that God would move them to another town – or country. A couple of days later the problem moved town!

Another friend had a problem with someone who rented a house from them, but never intended to pay the rent. We prayed the 'Get God or Go' prayer. The same week they left the house for good.

Another time someone was having terrible grief from a next-door neighbour. So we prayed the 'Get God or Go' prayer, and that evening when my friend returned home, they saw their neighbour being carried away in an ambulance. Naturally, we prayed for their recovery!

My wife and I were on a coach holiday in China. One person in the group required a wheelchair most of the time. As I was involved in the healing ministry, I wanted to offer her healing prayer, but I didn't want to offend her or make her feel awkward in any way about her disability. So one night I prayed to God that if He wanted me to offer

her healing prayer, He would arrange the circumstances, and allow me to ask her.

The following day we were all on an internal flight to our next destination. The seats were in rows of three, my wife was next to a window and I had a middle seat. The last person on the plane was the lady I prayed about, and her allocated seat was next to mine! I don't think God could have made things any easier for me to be able to chat with her about her condition and offer healing prayer. I spoke to her about the healing miracles at our church and Listening To God, and she was genuinely interested. The following day we met her and her mother for healing prayer. I knew she was going to need ongoing prayer, so I recommended she visit the local Healing Rooms on her return home. We also prayed for her mother, who was suffering from arthritic pain in her hands. The following day her mother told us the pain in her hands was much less, and she had greater mobility.

One lady came for healing prayer and said, "You won't be able to do anything for me". She had terrible constant pain in her leg. We said a short prayer commanding the pain to go and for healing in Jesus' name. We asked her to stand and walk. She looked at us and shook her head, but did what we asked. She said. "it's no better." We prayed again, and then asked her to walk, but again the same result. We prayed a third time and again asked her to walk. She looked at us as though we were stupid and said. "I told you, you wouldn't be able to do anything for me." But as she walked, she looked shocked, for the pain had gone!

One lady came to our Bible Study group and told us she was going

to see the eye specialist the following week because she had a hole in her retina. We prayed for her eye to be healed and when she went to the eye specialist, he examined her eye and said. "It's healed". The lady asked him. "Is this normal?" He replied. "No, it's not normal, but your eye is healed, and I am discharging you" With that, he wrote her letter of discharge which she brought to show us at church.

Another time someone had glaucoma and asked for healing prayer. Later she went to see the eye specialist who examined her eyes and the doctor said to her. "Your notes show that you have glaucoma, and the glaucoma got worse, but now you don't have any signs of glaucoma. What have you done with your glaucoma?" She said. "I have had healing prayer in Jesus' name! At Christ Church Pellon". She was very proud of the fact God healed her at our church.

As a result of the breakthrough in healing prayer in our church, I became a member of the healing team at Halifax Healing Rooms, where I learned a great deal about the healing ministry and witnessed people healed as we prayed for them. But it's not just physical healing that God is concerned about, He also cares about our emotional healing.

One time I was at another church where we were learning how to hear from God, and receiving a word from God for each other. I was with a young lady who was just so happy and cheerful and was always smiling. I asked God what He wanted me to say to her. God said. "Ask her about the pain in her life." At first, I thought I had misheard God, I couldn't believe this lady had any pain in her life at all she was just so happy and cheerful, and when she smiled it was

like the sun shining! She couldn't possibly have any pain in her life. So I asked God again to give me a message for her, hoping that this time I would get something sensible! But God again told me to ask her about the pain in her life. So I said to her "I feel God is saying to me to ask about the pain in your life, can you think of anything?" Suddenly her face changed, and she began to cry as she told me about her considerable pain. The thing that hurt her was the thought that God didn't know or care about her pain. But this word from God showed her that God did know and He did care about her and, as a result, her church was able to give her the emotional support she needed.

One day two ladies came to our Listening to God meeting. At the end of the meeting, I asked if anyone wanted to receive healing prayer, or prayer for anything else. One lady said she wanted prayer, but when I asked her what she would like us to pray for she wouldn't tell us. "Just pray for me," she said. As we were praying for her, I asked God to show me what He wanted to say to her, and He gave me a picture. So, then I asked her. "Are you angry with God?" And she replied "No." I then told her "God has shown me a picture of white clouds, and a hand coming up through the clouds and the hand forming a fist, and shaking their fist at God, and it's your hand! That's why I asked if you were angry with God". The lady looked shocked and said, "No I'm not angry with God, well, not anymore!" The lady didn't wish to share anything else about the matter and left following our prayers. The following week the two ladies arrived early, and she told us that she was very angry with God, but it was a secret that only her friend

knew about. So, when I told her about the picture and asked if she was angry with God, she knew that only God could have told me the truth. She then explained why she was angry with God, and part of her anger had to do with the fact she felt abandoned by God as

though God didn't care about her. We were able to reassure her that even though she was angry with God, God still loved her and cared about her. We prayed for her and were able to offer her some direction towards resolving her difficulties.

One time I was praying for someone and God gave me a picture of what looked like an x-ray. The x-ray was of a backbone but from the side, and was as though the person was stooped down, or bowed down. I told the person about the picture, and said to them you don't have a pain in your back or a back problem do you. They replied they didn't. And I said, I know. I feel it is a spiritual problem because I feel God is telling you to stand tall. Sometime later they told me they did have

a spiritual problem and that message from God helped them to stand tall, and to deal with a specific situation that had been troubling them.

Another time I was praying for someone and all I could see was a red mist. I asked them. "Do you have problems with feelings of anger, because all I can see for you is a red mist?" The answer was that they did have big problems with feelings of anger, which God had now highlighted for the person to deal with.

Someone came to our healing service who had been praying for physiotherapy for a painful shoulder. We prayed for them and the following week they said they were pain-free, and said: "And healing prayer is much cheaper than physiotherapy". Yes, it's free!



One Sunday following the church service while people were having coffee and chatting, two of us were offering healing prayer in the side chapel. I suggested that when the next person came for prayer, instead of asking them what they wanted prayer for we would ask God first. So when a young man came in we said. “Don’t tell us your problem, we are going to ask God first”. We invited God to speak to us for the man, and after a few minutes, my friend said. “You have a pain on the right side of your face”. The man then said he had been suffering from

pain there following a visit to the dentist. He had been taking painkillers but was still in pain after days. We prayed for him and the pain went.

I had just finished writing my book – Healing For The Bereaved, and was about to set off on holiday. So I decided to take one of the books with me in case I met someone who had recently been bereaved, and I would give them the book. I then decided to take two books and I asked God for Him to arrange for me to meet two people who had recently been bereaved. We were on a cruise, and at dinner, we were at a table with four others, one married couple and two friends. On the last evening of the cruise, I still hadn’t met anyone who had recently been bereaved. So at dinner, I told the four about my book and my prayer, and then said. “As I have not met anyone who has recently been bereaved, I expect two of you have recently been bereaved”. They all looked surprised, because the married lady had

been bereaved a month ago, and one of the friends had been bereaved that same week! I asked them if they would like a free copy of the book and they both accepted. You may think something like

this is just a coincidence, but I have found, like many other Christians have also found that if you are willing, God will bring about the opportunities to serve Him and share the good news of Jesus Christ.

A few years ago, I attended a Christian Men's Weekend at Bawtry Hall near Doncaster. The previous year at the men's weekend they all made a joke about my 65th birthday (I was fifty-eight at the time). It was good fun, and the men enjoyed the practical joke of a birthday cake and birthday cards – it wasn't even my birthday! So, the following year I wasn't expecting anything unusual, but I guess I should have known better. One morning before our coffee break, we had a time for worship and then prayer. I asked God to reveal something for the men and then shared what I felt God was showing me. The first thing was about a house that had a mechanical door closer fitted to all the doors in the house, the type you find in schools, hospitals and business premises, so it was unusual to be in a house. One of the men was surprised about what I said because when he moved into his house these were on all the doors and he removed them.

Then I said I had a picture of a brown cake and the words "This cake is for sharing." The men claimed it didn't mean anything to anyone. Ten minutes later in came the tea and coffee, but instead of the usual biscuits, the manageress brought in a large brown chocolate cake and a jug of cream and said to me. "Happy 65th Birthday David" along with the cheers and laughter from my friends. Later one of my friends asked me. "How often does God speak to you like that?" to which I replied, "Whenever I ask". I think this answer surprised my friend but being able to communicate with God and witness healings from God,

these things that once seemed supernatural, had now become a very

natural part of my life. Also, not just my life, this was also the experience of my friends who developed the ability to hear from God and trust God to heal.

One lady told me “Before I came to this church, I wasn’t sure if God existed or not. But now, learning about Jesus Christ and experiencing the miracles of healing and words from God, now I know for sure God is real”

.

The evidence for God is that God reveals the future, he reveals the end of time from the beginning of time, and God heals and communicates with His people through dreams and visions, just as He has done for the past two thousand years. You can read about this in the New Testament of the Holy Bible, and you can read the testimonies of Christians down through history, and you can also experience the reality of these things in your own life.

Some of you reading this book may have had a loved one who suffered illness or disability and then passed away. Perhaps you prayed for their healing but it never happened. Or perhaps you are going through some medical condition, and you feel God has not answered your prayers for healing. I have prayed for God to heal people and seen some wonderful and instantaneous healings, but I have also prayed for people to be healed who later died. The only explanation I can offer,

besides the fact we will all at some time face physical death, is that when it comes to divine healing, we enter into spiritual warfare, for there is a spiritual enemy opposed to divine healing. Since healing prayer cannot harm a person, and it is free, it is worthwhile to pray

for healing and to receive healing prayer.

Following my Pentecost supernatural encounter with angels and with God, I went on a church weekend away to Sneaton Castle in Whitby. I was listening to our guest speaker giving a talk about people and their relationship with God. She said that some people are atheists, they have no experience of God. Some people believe in God, but they don't go to church or pray. Some people believe in God, go to church, worship God, and become part of the church family. They know that God loves them because the Holy Bible tells them so. Then there is another group of Christians, who not only know that God loves them, but they feel, really loved by God. Suddenly I realised that was me, I felt really loved by God, and I was surprised. I had been a Christian for years, but over the past few months I felt different. It was hard to put into words how I felt, but there was something within me had changed. That was the supernatural experience of feeling loved by God. Over the following nine months I had grown closer to God, and God had grown closer to me. I expected this feeling of being loved by God to diminish over time,

but it has stayed with me ever since, even through the most difficult of times in my life. Many of my Christian friends have the same experience of feeling loved by God, and I hope you who read this book will also enjoy the same blessing from God in your own life.

When I wanted to learn how to listen to God, I found it difficult to find any good clear instruction. Many of the books I read about the Holy Spirit and the gifts of the Spirit spoke about listening and hearing from God. They gave many amazing examples, but they were not very forthcoming in telling you exactly how to hear from

God. It was as though people were born with the ability to flow in the gifts of the Spirit rather than could learn or develop those gifts, and it was very frustrating.

Fortunately, I discovered Marketplace Ministries in Totnes run by Lindy Strong. Her online course on how to listen and communicate with God was exactly what I needed. Later, when I was leading our own Listening To God meeting in church, I wanted to develop my ability to hear from God clearly. As I live in Halifax and that is some three hundred miles from Totnes, I couldn't attend regular meetings

there (which would have been ideal really). So, I began looking for somewhere closer to home, where I could go and get practical experience to develop this gift of listening to God. I found Pastor Graeme Foster of the Apostolic Church in Fenton, Stoke on Trent. Graeme held monthly meetings where he taught about the gifts of the Holy Spirit, and there was an opportunity for everyone there to listen to God for one another. They even had children aged ten who were able to listen and share a word from God. Graeme was very kind in allowing me to attend these meetings, which helped me so much in developing my gift. It was also a real pleasure to join in the worship there, which involved many people from the African and Caribbean countries, who were joyful and lively in their worship.

Any Christian can learn how to receive a word from God by listening to God by reading a book, but we activate this gift through practice. We ask God to speak to us, we wait for God to speak, and then we share what God has revealed to us. We often have to step outside our comfort zone and ask God to give us a word for someone, and then share that word with them. No matter how seemingly insignificant the message, word or picture may seem to

us, it can be life-changing for the person receiving it.

By allowing God to communicate with us what He wants to say, we may feel we are entering the world of the supernatural, but this should be, and is for some, normal everyday life as a Child of God. When we begin to receive words, thoughts, and pictures, they will come from one of three sources. They may come from God, they may come from the depths of our own thoughts and desires, or they may come from the enemy – Satan, or more likely one of the fallen angels (demons). So how do we make sure we do not fall victim of being deceived by demons? Well, God warned us about this through prophecy.

*But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than that which we have preached to you, let him be accursed.*

*9 As we said before, so say I now again, if any man preaches any other*

*gospel to you than that you have received, let him be accursed.*

*Galatians 1:8-9. (c. 60 AD).*

*Beloved, believe not every spirit, but test the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets have gone out into the world.*

*2 Hereby you will know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God.*

*3 And every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come*

*in*

*the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist. 1 John 4:1-*

*3. (c. 60 AD).*

When inviting God to speak to us, we are inviting God the Father, God the Son (Jesus Christ) and God the Holy Spirit. We do NOT invite angels to speak to us (although God could send an angel to us). We do NOT invite saints to speak to us, nor anyone we know who has passed away, nor do we invite the Blessed Virgin Mary to speak to us. Those who try to open a line of communication with anyone other than God, may end up requiring deliverance ministry, and possibly offending God.

When we invite God to speak to us we do not test God! But to ensure we receive from God and not the enemy, we measure everything we receive by the Word of God, the Christian Holy Bible. We do not receive any new teaching that overrules what the gospels and the scriptures of the New Testament tell us about God. Many have ignored this simple way of avoiding deception, and as a result there are hundreds of cults in the world today. Some seem identical to the Christian faith but are full of messages that contradict the teachings of Jesus Christ.

For this reason, it is valuable for someone who wishes to learn how to hear from God, to meet with other mature Christians who are strong in the faith and know what God has spoken to His people through the Holy Bible. However, learning to hear from God is like exercising a muscle, it grows stronger with exercise. So, as well as

meeting with other Christians it is valuable to spend time on your own with God. We need a time and place where we can be quiet without any disturbances. Begin by sitting comfortably, and if you need to pray about something then do that first before listening to God. Do not confuse prayer with listening to God. We begin with a short prayer inviting God to speak to us, then we empty our minds of distracting thoughts to keep it clear for God.

Imagine that in your mind there is a large flat-screen TV, and we are inviting God to project images, words, and scriptures on that screen. We may also hear something audibly in the same way we can imagine our favourite song playing. When you first try this, you may get all kinds of junk coming into your mind, things about work, home, food, sport or anything. Don't get annoyed simply acknowledge that it is a distraction and allow it to float off the screen. I used to practice 20 minutes a day every day, and it took some three weeks before I could clear my mind of the junk, and feel I was getting anything from God. But this was because I was all on my own, without any help at all. Since that time, I have often been amazed at how quickly those who came to our Listening to God meetings were able to hear from God. With practice, you will find it easier to clear your mind and begin to realise you are receiving words and pictures that do not come from your imagination but from another source. That other source will be God.

Each time you listen to God, God is going to project another picture, symbol, or word of scripture on that TV screen in your mind. God is doing two things here. First, God often speaks to us in symbols, so He is teaching you what these symbols mean. He is getting you used to listening to Him and receiving from Him as though it were as natural as breathing. The aim of listening to God is so that we can



ask God for a word for ourselves or another person, whenever we want to and immediately receive an answer from God. Also, God wants us to be ready in this way so that He can rely on us, He can give us a word for someone, even if we have never met them before, or even if the word from God doesn't make any sense to us.

When I ask God to show me something for a person, I usually receive a picture. This could be something of with great detail such as looking at a map, or at times I can barely see the image. I carry postcard-size blank cards with me, and I draw the image on the card. I am not very artistic, but I try! As I draw the image, I usually receive information, words or scriptures, or whatever God is trying to say to me. I write down what I receive, and then having shared with the person the message from God I give them the card. I am often surprised when people tell me they still have the card – years later. Or they tell me they have it pinned to their fridge door, or under a glass cover of their coffee table! My friend does something similar, but she has to use sheets of notepaper as she receives so much from God. However, you only need to receive just one word from God for a person and that one word can be life-changing for them.

At our Listening to God meetings, we have lots of laughter, because God does have a wonderful sense of humour. There are of course serious and awesome messages from God, and often a wonderful sense of peace from listening to God in this way. Through listening to God for others, God can demonstrate His love for them in the most amazing and supernatural way. Often those who come for the first time to our Listening to God meeting, leave as though they are walking on air, and amazed at how much God loves and cares about them.

From reading the Christian Holy Bible we know that God can speak to us in our dreams. Sometimes a dream from God can be prophetic, telling us what is going to happen in the future. They can also be of God warning us of some kind of danger, or of a blessing, or of God wanting to comfort us. Here is a list of dreams in the Holy Bible and I will indicate which ones are prophetic dreams.

1. God warns Abimelech not to take Abraham's wife. Genesis 20:1-7.

(Warning).

2. God promises the Land of Canaan to Jacob (Jacob's Ladder).

Genesis 28:10-19. (Blessing).

3. God warns Jacob in a dream to return home. Genesis 31:11-13.

(Warning).

4. God warns Laban about how to speak to Jacob. Genesis 31:24.

(Warning).

5. God gives Joseph two prophetic dreams about what will happen in the future. Genesis 37:1-10 and Genesis 42:6-9. (Prophetic).

6. The butler and the baker of the King of Egypt both had a dream.

Joseph told them "Do not interpretations of dreams belong to God?

Tell me your dreams". They told Joseph their dreams and Joseph

correctly told them the interpretation of what would happen to both

of

them. Genesis 40:5-23. (Both prophetic dreams).

7. God gives the King of Egypt two dreams which Joseph correctly interprets. Genesis 41:1-44. (Prophetic).

8. Gideon overhears a dream and interpretation from God. Judges 7:9-

15. (Prophetic).

9. God speaks to King Solomon in a dream and grants his desire for wisdom. 1 Kings 3:1-15. (Prophetic).

10. The King of Babylon has a disturbing dream from God, and then God gives the dream and interpretation to Daniel in a dream. Daniel 2:1-49. (Prophetic).

11. The King of Babylon has another dream from God, and Daniel gives the interpretation. Daniel 4:1-37. (Prophetic).

12. God gives Daniel a dream and interpretation. Daniel 7:1-28. (Prophetic).

13. An angel speaks to Joseph in a dream and tells him to marry Mary

the mother of Jesus. Matthew 1:18-24. (Comfort).

14. God warns the wise men to return home. Matthew 2:1-12. (Warning).

15. God warns Joseph in a dream to go to Egypt for safety. Matthew

2:13-15. (Warning).

16. God tells Joseph in a dream it is safe to return home. Matthew

2:19-21. (Comfort).

17. God warns Joseph in a dream to take a different route home.

Matthew 2:22-23. (Warning).

There are many books available on the subject of interpreting dreams and explaining every colour, symbol or picture. I would say they are a waste of money! The very best book you can buy on dream interpretation is the Christian Holy Bible. The reason for that is the source of our dreams can come either from the desires of our hearts, from the enemy (one of Satan's demons) or it will come from God. Therefore, as we have no interest in communicating with the demonic,

or trying to find some interpretation from the junk that floats into our minds, we want to hear from God. Having a reasonable understanding of the Holy Bible will go a long way in interpreting our dreams from God.

Let's say you have a dream and you see a vivid colour picture of a lion. What does a picture of a lion mean to you? In the Holy Bible we read. Satan prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour. 1 Peter 5:8. We also read. The Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David has prevailed. Revelation 5:5. Both are pictures of a lion, one represents Satan and the other represents Jesus Christ.

If you take a look in a dream interpretation book or look online, it will probably say the lion represents courage or strength, and it sounds quite reasonable, but may not be the explanation of the interpretation from God. I was once spending time alone listening to God, and I felt God telling me to stand, which I did. My eyes were closed because I wanted to blank out all distractions and see what God wanted to show me. Then I had a picture of a lion standing on my right side, and I could feel the lion pressing gently at my side. I remembered the time I had a Labrador that would do the same thing, it would stand at my side and press its body gently against my leg. Knowing what I know about the nature of God, I knew it wasn't Satan who was looking to devour me. It was the Lion of Judah a representation of Jesus Christ. God was with me, at my side, and no matter what I went through, no matter what I faced, God was always with me to protect me from harm. This was a picture of God comforting me, and giving me His assurance.

It may be that when we have a dream from God, or someone comes to us with a dream they want us to interpret, the meaning is quite obvious. However, when we have a dream that we cannot interpret we simply ask God for the interpretation and God will give it. That is why listening to God is so important. We don't need to carry around a dream interpretation book or go online. We just close our eyes and pray to God for the answer and pay attention to what God shows us or says to us.

At our church, when we feel God has given us a message for someone or we interpret a dream for them, we need to keep in mind an important reality. What we think we have received, may be from God, or from the depths of our own mind, or from the enemy. God never makes a mistake but we can, and so for that reason, we stick

to the following rules

.

The Rules.

The reason we have rules at our Listening To God meeting, is that those of us who are old enough to remember the Charismatic Renewal of the 1980s, also remember the problems it caused in some churches. In keeping the following rules, we ensure that no one gets burnt by the experience and that everything we do is for the good of the Church. Everything that we hear from God should be held under the light of the Holy Bible.

When sharing a Word from God with someone, we never share anything negative or hurtful, and we never speak to them about their sins. Should we feel that God has shown us something for a person that could in any way be considered negative or hurtful, no matter what it is, we do not share it with them or anyone else. Instead, we speak privately to the priest or minister of that congregation. It is the work of the Holy Spirit to convict a person of their sins – it is not our job!

The priest or minister is the shepherd of the sheep with a responsibility to God and the congregation, so we follow their lead in all matters. When we invite God to speak to us for ourselves, we should not be surprised if God speaks to us about our character. In fact, we should invite God to speak to us about our character, so that we might become more like Christ. See Galatians 5:22-23. The Fruit of The Spirit.

When we start to hear God clearly for ourselves and others, we must always allow for the fact we may get things wrong. We may not have heard clearly, or the enemy may have managed to get a word in! God is never wrong, and we are never always right. The biggest problem we will have is when people start saying nice

things about me! This is particularly true if God gives me an amazing prophecy which is then fulfilled, or the gifts of healing where we pray for someone and they are instantly healed by God. Some members of the church may start holding us in high esteem. The danger is that we may suffer from an inflated ego and think of ourselves as being far more important than we really are. All we have done is ask God to give us a word for someone, God has spoken and we have passed on the message from God. All we have done is pray for someone to be healed, and God has healed them. We have not become Moses, Elijah or Jesus Christ, we are just very ordinary Christians, Children of God and no more important than any other member of the Church.

When sharing a Word from God for someone it is better to say I feel God is saying this, or I feel God is showing me this for you, rather than saying Thus says the Lord your God! In this way, if the person receiving comes to realise you are wrong, they won't blame God. Instead, they will realise the error is on your part.

When someone comes to you asking for a Word from God for a particular reason, make sure you only share with them what God has said or shown you. Do not express your own thoughts or the desires of your own heart as though they came from God. For example, you tell them that their surgery will be successful, or they will get that job they want, or the outcome will be exactly as they wish. If things

don't turn out the way they wanted and the way you imagined (rather than

heard from God), they will either blame you or blame God. And if you don't get anything from God, don't make something up. Tell them you couldn't get anything for them at the moment, but you will try again later, and offer to pray with them.

In this way, by following the rules in listening to God for others, we make sure everyone is protected, and the experience is what it should be, a wonderful, experience of the love of God to His children.

In this chapter, I have shared with you some of my personal experiences through the Holy Spirit of the power and presence of God. I could have shared hundreds of supernatural experiences from other Christians, and those would have been so impressive, that you may think my experiences insignificant by comparison. But, I have often been told by people, that a word or a picture I gave them from God (many years earlier) meant so much to them over the years. Just as I have been very grateful to those who asked God for a word for me.

When I was learning how to receive a message from God, and learning about the healing ministry. I read about fasting, and how others fasted. I went on a couple of three-day fasts, and then a seven-day fast, and I did one forty-day fast, where I had nothing to eat except a bowl of stew (meat and vegetables) once a day, plus tea and coffee throughout the day. I thought that in doing so, God would notice my efforts and reward me! I was wrong!



Years afterwards, I was watching a video of someone who had a great healing ministry. And he said, “You can fast until your belly-button sticks to your backbone, but that won’t make any difference in the healing ministry”

He also said, that he once had three identical dreams, over three consecutive nights. And he felt very special that God would do that for him. Well, he felt special until God told him the reason he had to repeat the dreams is because Thicco didn’t get the message first time! Did I mention God had spoken to me through an identical dream over three consecutive nights? So, you see, I am not very special at all!

Having said that, I would now like to share with you the greatest healing I have ever witnessed. When God healed me of pancreatic cancer!

In 2021, suffered a back injury which developed into severe pain in my back and down my right leg. Over a period of three weeks, it just got worse to the point the pain was constantly severe with occasional lapses to mildly severe! I could not sleep, I could not lay down, and there was no position I could stand or sit without pain.

Doctors gave me ever increasingly strong painkillers, but nothing stopped the pain. I couldn’t believe how it was humanly possible for anyone to live with such constant pain, and none of my prayers brought any relief. Towards the end, I was feeling very down and praying for God to heal me or take me to heaven, I didn’t mind which, I just wanted the pain to stop.

Then one Sunday morning, two ladies from our church came and

prayed for my healing. Nothing appeared to happen, but a couple of hours later, I realised I had been watching TV and the pain had significantly reduced. I wasn't free of pain, but the severity had gone. By the following day, I was totally healed. Healed by the prayers of my two friends when they prayed for me to be healed in Jesus' name.

A year later, at the age of sixty-seven, I had not been feeling well and phoned the doctors. I thought I had a gastro problem, and the doctor prescribed some tablets. The following day I phoned the doctor again as I had got worse and had jaundice, the whites of my eyes and my skin were yellow. I had tests and the doctor told me I had pancreatic cancer and referred me to the hospital. Another doctor had seen my blood tests and other tests, and he also told me I had pancreatic cancer. He arranged for me to have a couple of scans, more blood tests and an appointment with the surgeon.

This was not good news, as the only people I knew who had pancreatic cancer died very quickly. Also, as I was age 67 I thought perhaps I would be unable to have surgery, and my wife would have to plan my funeral.

However, I am a Christian, a retired minister of God, and I was a member of a Christian healing team where all of us had witnessed some wonderful miracles of

Healing over the years. Also, God had spoken to me many times for myself or others, through my dreams, visions and angelic visitations. I decided to ask God if I was going to die.

God told me three things. First, God reminded me that he had healed

me before and would heal me again. Second, God said that now was the time to begin my ministry. Third, God gave me the scripture from Psalm 118:17 – I shall not die, but live and declare the works of the Lord our God. As I knew I could always trust in the prophecies and promises of God, I knew for sure God would heal me.

So I asked God for something. I wanted God to give me a wonderful testimony of healing. I asked God to heal me without my having surgery or any medical treatment of any kind. I wanted to be able to tell people about the wonderful works of the Lord my God. For God said he would heal me, and without any surgery or medical treatment God healed me. I thought it was something worth asking God for.

However, within two days, my health went into a steep terminal decline. I didn't want to eat or drink, and any food I put into my mouth tasted of nothing. I had a list of ailments, including at least three times a day, my body would shake uncontrollably as though I was shivering with cold (even though I was warm) for twenty minutes at a time. I had other symptoms, which I won't bother you with the details, but I looked like death, and I felt like death.

But my health was declining rapidly, and I could hear Satan taunting me – “you're not going to live, you're going to die, and soon.” Also, as I was watching TV, every second advert seemed to be either about death from cancer, or asking if I had made my funeral arrangements! And I would swear at the TV! And then proclaim the promise of God, that I would not die, but live and declare the works of the Lord my God.

Just before Christmas and family and friends who came to visit me, you could tell by the look on their faces they thought I was going to die quite soon. I told them all, God told me He was going to heal me, but they thought I was deluded and I would soon be dead. My wife would keep asking me how I was, and I would reply the same way “I am fine, for I know God is going to heal me”. She thought I was just hoping for the best.

My prayers and my main concern was not about my death, or even how long it would take me to recover. But I was concerned for my wife, who I knew would be worried about me, and how she could do nothing for me, but just watch her husband slowly die. I knew Satan would be telling her I was going to die and that I had no hope. So I kept praying for her continually. Also, I was determined that if I was going to die, I was not going to spend my last days living in fear. Instead, I decided that I would continue praising God to my dying breath. But I would never, ever give up in trusting in the prophecies and promises of God.

Then, about a week after Christmas, day by day, little by little I began to feel better. When the surgeon contacted me towards the end of January, he told me, “I have all your test results, and I can tell you, you don’t have cancer”. As you can imagine my wife and I were elated with the good news. God had told me He would heal me, and he did – without surgery or any kind of medical treatment. Praise the Lord!

Within three months, I was back to full health and able to do heavy

manual work. Also, my family and friends who had seen me were shocked and delighted at my recovery. Three years later, on visits to the doctors for minor ailments. The doctors would look at my notes and ask me how I was getting on, assuming I must have had surgery or medical treatment. They were amazed when I told them I hadn't had anything, and how God promised he would heal me, and he did.

Sometimes, when I have shared how God healed me, people will say it was my positive mental attitude that healed me. And I tell them that having a positive mental attitude might help you go through the illness, but its end is death. Others, who can't bring themselves to believe in God, tell me the doctors must have misdiagnosed my condition.

I tell them that I might believe that was true, if it were not for the fact that I know from the study of the Holy Bible, I can trust in every promise and prophecy of God. I also have the benefit of having God speaking to me directly, through my dreams and visions, through his angels, and through other Christians, as well as through the scriptures. As a result, I have hundreds of experiences of the power and presence of God in my life. Yes, if it were not for all of this evidence, I might believe the doctors misdiagnosed my condition. But I know the truth, and that is why I did not die, but live and declare the works, the wonderful works of the Lord my God, through Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. Amen!

In the past three years since God healed me of pancreatic cancer. I

have shared my testimony of the love, power and presence of God, with more people than I did over the previous forty years! Also, the three months from being diagnosed to the day the surgeon told me I was completely clear of cancer. Those were the darkest, most horrible days of my life. Yet I thank God every day of my life for those days, I thank God for every miserable minute. Because through them, God granted me the most wonderful gift of healing, and the most wonderful testimony to his love, power and presence. A testimony God has given me to share with you, dear reader. And, as you will read through the rest of this book. I am very proud to share with you the evidence for the meaning and purpose of your life here on Earth. And how you can live your life as a Child of God, in preparation for eternal life in heaven.

### 3. GOD OF HEAVEN AND EARTH

In schools across the UK, there are many that teach Religious Education but fail to teach our children about the reality for the evidence of God. Nor do they teach children how to experience the love, power and presence of God in their lives. Nor do they teach the children the meaning of their life on Earth, which is to prepare for eternal life in heaven.

As most teachers are oblivious to these facts, they are unable to teach the children the truth. This leaves the children completely unprepared to live life as adults in preparation to fulfil their eternal destiny.

When it comes to the subject of Science, the teachers still promote the fairy-story tale of evolution, based upon the scientific belief of the late 1800's! Any dissent from scientists is shut down without any thought, reasonable question or examination. They have taken the stand that God does not exist, and therefore any scientific explanation for anything that might suggest the existence of God, is immediately laughed at and rejected.

Ask these teachers the question. What is the meaning of your life on Earth? When they have revealed their fairy-story, ask them for the evidence to prove it is true.

What they should be able to tell you, is that **the meaning for your life, your very short life on Earth, is to prepare you for eternal life in Heaven. Nothing is more important than that.** They should also be able to provide you with the evidence, which I have provided in this book.

As you read through the rest of this chapter, it is worth noting the different opinions people have regarding evolution and creation. Some people think evolution proves God does not exist. Some

people think God created everything through the process of evolution. And some people believe that God is correct when he says he created everything in just six 24-hour days.

Why did God want us to believe he created all things in just six 24-hour days? The only answer, is that it is because it is true. God wants us to believe he is who he says he is, he has done what he says he has done, and he will do what he says he will do. God wants us to trust and believe in him for our eternal destiny, as children of God in his kingdom of heaven. God wants us to believe and trust in His one and only Son, Jesus Christ. To believe, trust and obey Jesus as our Lord and Saviour. And when we look to the evidence for God, we know we can always trust in every promise and prophecy of God.

Christians who know about the evidence for God and experience the evidence of the reality of the love, power and presence of God in their life. They are supremely confident that every prophecy and promise of God comes true, is fulfilled, exactly as God says it will be fulfilled. These prophecies, and the miracles of God should also be impossible if God did not exist. But God does exist, and the evidence proves it is true. So when we read the Ten Commandments of God, in Exodus 20:10-17, particularly verses 9-11. It becomes obvious God wants us to believe that he created everything within six 24-hour days.

So, lets see what the scientists have to say about evolution and creation.

In 1859 Charles Darwin published his theories on evolution, which developed over the past one-hundred and sixty years into what is now taught in schools and colleges. But Darwin's theory is not taught as a theory, but taught as if it were a scientific fact.

This theory, simply stated expects us to believe without question. That once upon a time, there was absolutely nothing. Not even the



smallest particle of any substance known to science, not even a spec of dust anywhere. Then, given billions of years, this nothing (and without any reason) suddenly evolved into something. Which ABRACADABERA! Evolved into the universe, into infinity, and produced the stars, planet Earth, all forms of life, including the laws of maths and physics.

Many of you reading this book will be familiar with Richard Dawkins, an evolutionary biologist who is often interviewed on TV and well known for his atheist belief that God cannot exist.

Yet in a TV interview with Piers Morgan on his TV show Piers Morgan Uncensored (3<sup>rd</sup> of September 2024. Dawkins second interview with Morgan). Dawkins refers to his first interview with Morgan, saying that he should not have been asked a particular question on his first interview. This is because he always asks the people arranging his interviews that he is never asked that particular question – ever! So Piers shouldn't have asked him that question.

In true Piers Morgan style, he gets Dawkins to refer to the question he doesn't want mentioned and actually states the question, which he is then obliged to answer. And that question is?

As those scientists who believe in evolution, and believe in the 'Big Bang' theory, when once upon a time nothing existed. Then following a big bang (which happened all by itself and without any particular reason, and not caused by any outside force), matter came into existence. The question is – what existed before the Big Bang? To which Dawkins replied, **“physicists tell us that we are not even to ask the question.” (of what existed before the Big Bang).**

Piers Morgan continued to question Dawkins by saying it is illogical to assume nothing existed before the Big Bang, and that a Big Bang could have happened without any external force of any kind. When according to the Big Bang theory, time, matter and space did not

exist.

Well, this is the awkward question that Richard Dawkins never wants to answer on TV or in any debate. And I can understand why, because it makes his argument look foolish, and his reasoning unscientific!

By coincidence, a Christian newspaper called the Good News, in their September 2024 edition. Published a story by Heather Tomlinson. The headline was – Famous Atheist Discovers Faith. Friend of Dawkins says: ‘God turned me around’.

One of the most outspoken critics of religion has changed her mind and now proudly speaks of her new Christian faith.

The person Heather was writing about was Ayaan Hirsi Ali, who was a key player in New Atheism and a friend of Richard Dawkins. You can hopefully still read the article from the archive at [www.goodnews-paper.org.uk](http://www.goodnews-paper.org.uk)

But what this demonstrates is that many of us who have grown-up trusting in the scientists and teachers who taught us Darwin’s theory of evolution. We are now discovering that evidence to be discredited by other scientists, and leading atheists are turning away from disbelief to faith in the Lord God of all creation.

Many atheists like Richard Dawkins assume all Christians believe in God without any evidence for that belief. But as you will read in this book, there is plenty of real evidence to prove that God exists, and that the history of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan of God.

Unfortunately, as spectacular as this ABRACADABRA, Big Bang evolution appears today, the scientists are like the prophets of doom for the future of humankind and planet Earth. They tell us it is inevitable the Sun will cool and suffer heat-death, and this will cause

all forms of life on Earth to die.

Also, there is not much hope in our colonising human life on another planet, because it is only a matter of time until the universe, every universe shuts down and dies. Of course, planet Earth could have suffered some cosmic disaster or total nuclear war, that brings death upon all life on Earth.

However, there is an alternative theory to how life began on Earth which doesn't rely upon chance, evolution over billions of years and gives eternal life and hope for the future.

The Christian Holy Bible tells us that God created all things seen and unseen. The physical things we can see with our eyes, and the things beyond our vision that can only be seen with giant telescopes or microscopes. And perhaps includes the heavenly realms of God and His angels.

Also, this creation by God was not an experiment. Everything created by God was done so according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God. Even we humans were created by God with a specific plan and purpose for our lives – here on earth and in God's Kingdom of Heaven.

In the final pages of the Holy Bible, we read of such devastation on earth and in the heavenly realms. It seems that planet Earth and the universe have come to an end. But God did not create humans and planet Earth to become a pile of dust and ashes floating around the universe.

God created planet Earth and humankind for eternal life, and reveals His plan for a new Heaven and Earth, where God and humankind live together in a Holy Communion.

But, as a young man I was an atheist, I didn't believe in God. I had been to a local Methodist Church on Sunday mornings until I was

age ten and then gave up going to church. At school I had no interest at all in religious education, and as an adult, I thought people who believed in God were deluded. After all, no one could prove that God existed – well, that's what I thought at the time!

But then I began contemplating the meaning of life and if there was life after death. I began thinking about Darwin's theory of evolution. The more I learned about nature and how incredibly complicated things were designed. Also the laws of maths and physics, why should they exist? Because without intelligent humans these laws serve no purpose at all.

In fact, there was no reason for life to come from non-living matter, no reason for planet Earth or the universe to exist. Only darkness, death and chaos, or absolute darkness, stillness and nothing at all.

The more I began to understand and appreciate this physical world in which we live, the laws of nature and physics and maths. The more I felt the idea of a God of creation was far more probable than planet Earth and life being formed by accident.

When we look at the design of a mechanical watch, it would be crazy to think that could have evolved out of nothing. It was created by someone according to the predetermined plan and purpose of its creator. The same is true when we look at creation, it screams at us the evidence of being created by intelligent design.

When I began to read the Holy Bible as an adult, I read of the account of creation by God. Of how God created according to His predetermined plan and purpose, and how God gave this creation for humankind to enjoy. It made sense, because what other animal can appreciate the beauty of creation like humans. And God created us in His own likeness. We love the beauty of creation, just as God loves the beauty of creation. We appreciate the laws of math and physics, because like God, we can use these to create and enjoy, and

appreciate God and the mind of our creator.

The Bible tells us in Romans 1:20, that since the beginning of creation, the reality of God and His power and divine creative nature. These can be clearly seen in all things that God has created.

To me, the biblical account of God's creation in the Bible made far more sense, and seemed far more reasonable than the theory of evolution. In fact, the theory of evolution became like a fairy story to me.

However, it was years later when having made the decision to become a Christian, and then years later when I began training as a minister in the Church of England. That I looked more deeply into Darwin's theory of evolution and the biblical account of creation by God.

As a minister in the church, I knew I was going to have to lead the Sunday morning service and deliver a sermon. I also knew I would have to be able to answer questions from the congregation, and one of those questions would be about evolution and creation.

So, in my research I did a Google search for Christians who believed in God, and for Christians who believed in the biblical account of creation in just six 24-hour days.

As expected, I found plenty of scientists who believed in God, and I found scientists who didn't believe in Darwin's theory of evolution. But I was surprised to discover there were many scientists who believed that science supported the six days of creation by God.

One website – [www.dissentfromdarwin.org](http://www.dissentfromdarwin.org) is where scientists express their scientific dissent from Darwinism.

The "Scientific Dissent From Darwinism" is a statement issued by a group of scientists expressing scepticism about Neo-Darwinism, specifically questioning whether random mutation and natural selection can fully explain the complexity of life.

The initiative, led by the Discovery Institute, responds to claims that no credible scientists doubt modern Darwinian theory. Drafted and circulated by the Discovery Institute in 2001, the statement has gathered over 1,000 signatures from scientists worldwide, aiming to highlight that there are credible scientists who are critical of Neo-Darwinism. theory.

So this is a good website to visit if you would like to know more about why some scientists dissent from Darwinism. However, some of the information here may have been written by professors for professors!

But I did find an excellent book written by professors, that can be understood by the average high school student. It's called –

*In Six Days. Why 50 Scientists Choose to Believe in Creation.* By John F Ashton PhD.

In this book John F Ashton invited 50 scientists who each have a PhD in their particular field of science to explain why, according to the science, they believe the science both refutes Darwin's theory of evolution, and supports the biblical account of creation within a very short time span.

These include scientists with PhD's in Biology, Biochemistry, Medical Research, Physical Chemistry, Genetics, Mathematical Physics, Organic Chemistry, Inorganic Chemistry, Medical Physics, Geophysics, Botany, Horticultural Science, Zoology, Nuclear Physics, Meteorology, Orthodontics, Electrical Engineering, Hydrometallurgy, Forestry Research, Physics, Information Science and Agricultural Science.

It makes for interesting reading, and although written by scientists it has been written so most people without a scientific background could understand.

Here is the author's description of the book from the rear cover.

Can any scientist with a PhD believe in the idea of a literal six-day creation?

*In Six Days* answers that provocative question. In this book, 50 scientists from around the world say 'Yes'! Taking a factual and scientific look at the evidence for evolution, physicists, biologists and chemists come to some disturbing and revealing conclusions. In their estimation, evolution may offer no more evidence than traditional religion and factually, it may lag behind.

Important questions about the Big Bang Theory, radioactive dating of rocks, light from distant stars, and the fossil evidence for evolution are discussed in detail. These essays examine the entire approach to science education, and are essential reading for educators, politicians, parents and students.

*In Six Days* opens the evolution versus creation debate to a wider public – not with narrow and closed arguments but with a straightforward and wide range of analysis of the issues confronting both the scientific community and the general public. This is a must-read book for all thinking people.

*In Six Days*. By John F Ashton. Published by Strand Publishing, Sydney.

On page 31, one contributor writes about life coming from non-living matter. Stating that scientists have demonstrated that the belief life could come from non-life, even if millions of years were available is untenable.

On page 92, another contributor writes that over the past 35 years scientists who believe in a recent six-day creation have made some very interesting discoveries and convincing arguments for a young Earth and a worldwide Noahic flood.

So, if you are interested in learning more about scientists who refute Darwin's theory of evolution, and claim the science supports the God who created all things in just six 24-hour days, then I highly recommend this book to you.

One of my favourite authors was the late Dr Victor Pearce, an eminent scientist, archaeologist and theologian, who produced a series of books called Evidence For Truth.

At school, I remember being taught the theory of evolution and being shown a picture of a row of stooping apes. It was used as 'evidence' of how humans had evolved from the apes.

In Victor's book. Evidence for Truth. Science. Victor writes about the stooping apes.

In chapter 6. The Missing Link. The Fossil Evidence (page 125). There is a picture of a row of six stooping apes. The first ape is dragging its knuckles on the ground and then each of the following apes is walking more and more upright until the last one is standing completely upright like a man.

Underneath the picture is written the following text –

Fig. 6.2 Row of stooping 'apes'

Showing the false speculation by Richard Leaky in a series of stooping hominids, which never existed but which are often depicted in school textbooks.

Victor writes – Anthropologists now have a great number of human-like fossils and a whole range of ape fossils, but between them there are no ape-men fossils.

On page 149. Victor writes of fraudulent museum displays.

Many museums do not tell the public that they have assumed an



evolutionary process and inserted a fossil to look like a link ‘in the interest of completeness’, but which have been taken from another place in the fossil record. There are many instances of this for example, the graptolites are often rearranged into an evolutionary-like succession, but actually the most complicated varieties come first.

In his book Volume 5. *Evidence for The Truth. The Origin and Destiny of Life*. In Chapter 6 Victor writes about the fraud of evolution. Writing about the so-called discoveries of the ‘missing link’ the half ape-half human link between ape and human. The missing link that would prove that humankind was a descendant from the apes. A number of ‘missing links’ were discovered, only for them to later discover they were not true or even deliberate frauds.

The Dawn Man tooth. From this discovery of a tooth, it was declared to be a very important link between apes and man. Only later after the details published in science publications did they discover it was the tooth of a pig!

The Java Man was claimed to be another ‘missing link’ between ape and man, until it was discovered that someone had hidden the thigh bones under the floorboards of his house which proved to be the bones of a man not a ‘missing link’.

Then there was the Piltdown Man, whose skull was discovered in 1912 and claimed to be the ‘missing link’ between ape and man. It was later discovered that the skull was just 400 years old, with the jaw of an ape filed down to fit the skull, and its teeth filed down and stained with chromate to make the teeth look old!

Whenever someone has claimed to find the ‘missing link’ between ape and man, it always turns out to be false. Yet most people have been programmed to accept Darwin’s theory of evolution, and

simply assume the missing link has been discovered and that humans have descended from the apes as scientific fact – but it is not true.

On pages 57 and 58 of his book *The Origin and Destiny of Life*, Victor writes about an amazing evolution fraud. In 1998 David Attenborough in his TV programme referred to a fossil of an Archaeopteryx as a prehistoric bird and the first to have feathers on its fossil. The fossil was re-examined and it was discovered that the feathers had been stuck on with glue!

For those of you who are interested in discovering more about the scientific evidence for God, then I recommend you visit the following websites. For there is an abundance of information, reports, books, DVD's, videos and broadcasts where you can learn much more on the subject.

Some of these have been produced for children and for schools, while others have been produced so that anyone with a high school education could understand them, while others have been produced by academics for academics.

Here are the websites –

**www.creation.com** In addition to the books, DVD's and articles they have a great Q&A section covering any question that you might have about creation and evolution.

**www.creationresearch.net** The Creation website by John Mackay. This website is a great resource of information and you can watch video presentations of John debating creation over evolution with Richard Dawkins. There is also a good Q&A section to answer your questions.

**www.creationscience.com** The Centre for Scientific Creation. Matt Brown PhD. Is the author of the book – *In The Beginning. Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood*. 466 pages. While the book may be out of print, I did a Google search and discovered

a PDF copy that was available as a free download. Also the website gives you the opportunity to read the book online.

**www.answersingenesis.org** Answers in Genesis is an apologetics ministry, dedicated to helping Christians defend their faith and proclaim the good news of Jesus Christ effectively. They focus on providing answers to questions about the Bible- particularly the book of Genesis- regarding key issues such as creation, evolution, science and the age of the earth. Lots of books, DVD's and information.

**www.icr.org** Institute for Creation Research. Books, DVD's, podcasts and even a Bible College.

**www.CreationResearch.org** The Creation Research Society is a professional organization of trained scientists and interested laypersons who are firmly committed to scientific special creation. The Society was organized in 1963 by a committee of ten like-minded scientists, and has grown into an organization with worldwide membership.

## 4. GOD REVEALS THE FUTURE

### Prophecies of God # 1-35.

In this chapter, you will discover how God has revealed himself to the world, as Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. You will also discover the evidence for God, through the prophecies of God. Prophecies that prove the history of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God. Reading about God and these prophecies will prepare you to read chapter 5 and chapter 6. For they form the foundation for you to learn about Jesus Christ who can award you with eternal life in heaven.

Before I became a Christian, I spent eighteen months researching other religions and faiths. But during that time I didn't look at the Christian religion, because having been taught it at school, I thought I knew all about it. But I was wrong, very wrong!

It was at the end of my study that someone suggested I read the four gospels in the Christian Bible. They said it will mean more to you now as an adult than when you were a child. And they were right. It was as though everything I had learned about God from other faiths had prepared me for this moment. By this time, I believed in God, but felt as though God was a million miles away from me, and God was not in any way concerned about me or my life.

However, as I began reading the eyewitness statements of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John (the writers of the four gospels). I discovered God through Jesus Christ and I was amazed to discover that God loved me! But more than that, Jesus died on the cross to pay the penalty for my sins. The times I had broken the commandments of God in thought word or deed. The times when I laughed at God, laughed and made jokes about Jesus on the cross. The time I used Jesus' name as a swear word. All of these things I am ashamed of now, and all of these things would have prevented me from entering God's Kingdom of Heaven when I die.

And yet as the Bible tells us. God loved humankind so much that He gave His one and only Son, Jesus Christ, as a sacrifice of God. A sacrifice for

the penalty of our sins, Jesus paid the price for our sins by surrendering His life on the cross. The death that we deserved by breaking the commandments of God, Jesus took our place. He died so that we might have eternal life with God our Father in Heaven. That's why the Bible says that whoever believes and trusts in Jesus Christ should not perish in the second death in hell, but have everlasting life.

This means when we repent of our sins to God, accept Jesus Christ and His sacrifice for our sins, trust in Jesus and become obedient to His teachings. Then we are forgiven by God of all our sins and become children of God here on Earth and inheritors of God's Kingdom of Heaven in the life hereafter.

I must admit, it took me some time to fully appreciate exactly what Jesus had done for me. But by the time I had finished reading the four gospels and the rest of the New Testament of the Bible. I had decided that if there was anyone in the history of the world who was worth following, then it was definitely Jesus Christ.

And so, I said a prayer to God, repenting of my sins, my past life living without any care for God or His commandments. I joyfully accepted Jesus Christ's sacrifice on the cross – His death for the payment of my sins. I made a promise to God to learn from Jesus and be obedient to His teachings, and I thanked God for forgiving me my sins and for giving me the gift of eternal life. And that was the start of a beautiful journey with God through Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit, that has continued for over forty years.

And what an amazing journey it has been, to experience the love of God, the joy of God, the peace of God, and the amazing power and presence of God at work in my life and through my life with Jesus Christ my Lord and Saviour.

As you read through the pages of this book, you will read of miracles of healings, of God communicating directly with me, or through His angels, or through my dreams or visions, or through other Christians.

But the best thing is that you are going to read how you can also experience the love, joy, peace, power and presence of God in your own life. You will also learn how to establish a connection with God, so God can communicate with you, so you can experience the power of God working in and through you. And you will learn how to become a child of God and receive the gift of eternal life in heaven. And all that is in addition to learning about the evidence for God!

But before we begin looking at the evidence for God, I first want to share with you something that we as Christians believe about the nature of God. As Christians, we believe in only one God, the Lord God of all creation. But we also believe that God has revealed Himself to the world in the three persons of God our Father, God the Son, Jesus Christ, and God the Holy Spirit. This is what Christians refer to as the 'Trinity of God'.

Of course, it is difficult to imagine three individual persons that are of such complete unity, mind and purpose who are all individuals but co-equal with and as God. But the evidence for God shows that this is true, as you will read in this book.

In the year 325 AD, bishops from around the world gathered together to discuss the Christian faith in God through Jesus Christ. During that meeting they produced a statement of faith in which they were all in agreement. It became known as the Nicene Creed. This statement of faith was a result of careful study of the scriptures, the life of Jesus Christ, His disciples and followers – not just at the time of Christ but also in the lives of those who followed Jesus over the following three hundred years.

Today, all the main Christian denominations, the Catholic Church, Church of England, Baptist Church, Methodist Church and many of the Free Churches all continue to affirm their faith in God through Jesus Christ according to the Nicene Creed.

In the Church of England, every year we have one Sunday called 'Trinity Sunday', and this is when the minister will deliver a sermon on the Trinity of God. I would say that most ministers would prefer to preach on almost any subject than the Trinity of God! Why? Because it is such a mystery, beyond our comprehension. Because all we can know about God is what

God has revealed about Himself, and He has revealed Himself in the beautiful Trinity of God the Father, God the Son, Jesus Christ, and God the Holy Spirit.

So here is the Nicene Creed, don't worry about trying to fully understand it, just be aware that it exists. As you continue your journey of faith in God, it will begin to make more sense, as you are drawn deeper into God's love.

### **The Nicene Creed.**

We believe in one God,  
the Father, the Almighty,  
maker of heaven and earth,  
of all that is,  
seen and unseen.

We believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ,  
the only Son of God,  
eternally begotten of the Father,  
God from God, Light from Light,  
true God from true God,  
begotten, not made,  
of one Being with the Father;  
through him all things were made.  
For us and for our salvation he came down from heaven,  
was incarnate from the Holy Spirit and the Virgin Mary  
and was made man.  
For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate;  
he suffered death and was buried.  
On the third day he rose again  
in accordance with the Scriptures;  
he ascended into heaven  
and is seated at the right hand of the Father.  
He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead,  
and his kingdom will have no end.

We believe in the Holy Spirit,  
the Lord, the giver of life,  
who proceeds from the Father and the Son,

who with the Father and the Son is worshipped and glorified,  
who has spoken through the prophets.  
We believe in one holy catholic and apostolic Church.  
We acknowledge one baptism for the forgiveness of sins.  
We look for the resurrection of the dead,  
and the life of the world to come.  
Amen.

So, let us continue with the evidence for God in this exciting chapter –  
God Reveals The Future.

What does the future hold for you? Millions of people consult their daily horoscope or star sign printed in the papers, magazines or online. They want to know what the day, week, month or year ahead holds for them. Others consult mediums, spiritualists, or palm readers as their guide to the future. But there is one person who, since the beginning of creation, has foretold of the events in people's lives, and the events of nations down through history to our present day. And what is even more amazing, they have done so with 100% accuracy, for whatever they say will happen always happens exactly as they say it will happen. It is as though the history of the world and individuals have been unfolding according to some predetermined plan. That person is God. God the Father, God the Son Jesus Christ, and God the Holy Spirit.

In this book, I have listed over 100 prophecies of God, and I could have listed many more for the Holy Bible contains hundreds of prophecies of God. Prophecies that begin with creation and flow down through history to our present day and into the future. Prophecies that you can examine for yourself and see that they are genuine. Also, these prophecies are not random prophecies for the future. They are all connected to the person of Jesus Christ. No matter if you begin with a prophecy given in the past or the future, you can trace an invisible line connecting that prophecy to Jesus Christ. This is the amazing evidence of God through Jesus Christ, the evidence of the prophecies of God. For as the following prophecy tells us.

**(Prophecy # 1.)**

*<sup>9</sup> Remember the former things of old:  
for I am God, and there is no other.*



*I am God, and there is none like me.*

*<sup>10</sup> I declare the end from the beginning,*

*and from ancient times things that are not yet done.*

*I say: My counsel will stand,*

*and I will do all that I please. Isaiah 46:9-10. C.700 BC.*

This prophecy was given by God to his people through Isaiah and given some 700 years before the birth of Jesus Christ. Here God tells us that He is God and there are no other gods anywhere! God also states that according to his desire, and from the beginning of time he can foretell events to the very end of this age. Those who heard this statement didn't need to ask if it was true because the history of the Hebrews who became known as the Jews confirmed it was true. They had recorded the promises and prophecies of God down through history and whatever God said would happen, would always happen exactly as God said it would happen. These prophecies not only proved to them the existence of God, but they also proved to them that since the beginning of time, the history of humankind had been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

Seven hundred years later, following Jesus' death by crucifixion. Jesus rose from the dead and appeared to two of his followers.

*<sup>25</sup> He said to them, "Foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken!" <sup>26</sup> Didn't the Christ have to suffer these things and to enter into his glory?" <sup>27</sup> Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he explained to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself. Luke 24:25-27.*

Jesus explained to them all the prophecies in the Bible that spoke about Jesus Christ. Prophecies that were written about him between 1,400 and 400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ on earth.

Now, if you are sceptical as to the prophecies of God being genuine due to the fact that perhaps you don't believe in God, therefore the prophecies cannot be true. Then if God did not exist, it would have been impossible for any human to have made all these prophecies. This is because the prophecies of God cover a period of over six thousand years, and they are

all connected from the beginning of time to the end of this age.

Many of the prophecies of God were written in the Hebrew scriptures between 1,400 BC and 400 BC. Then there was a gap of some four hundred years before the birth of Jesus Christ. Over the first century, 0-100 followers of Jesus Christ collected the writings that recorded the life, ministry, crucifixion, death, being raised to life again and then ascending into heaven. They also recorded the events of the early Christian church. As you will read in the Gospel of Luke, the religious leaders of the Jews hated Jesus and had him crucified to death. Yet the prophecies in their own scriptures were fulfilled in Jesus and only ever fulfilled in Jesus. You will also read in Acts of The Apostles that Saul (St. Paul) persecuted the Christians until he had a supernatural encounter with Jesus Christ. In Acts 9:1-2, we read –

*But Saul, still breathing threats and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest<sup>2</sup> and asked for letters from him to the synagogues of Damascus, that if he found any who were of the Way, whether men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. Acts 9:1-2.*

This is Saul, who together with the leaders of the Jews hated Jesus so much they had him crucified. These religious leaders of the Jews would not have allowed any prophecies about Jesus to be added to their scriptures just to make Jesus look good. Yet the prophecies of Jesus remain in the Hebrew scriptures to this day, just as they did when the first scribe penned the prophecies of God a thousand years ago.

The religious leaders knew the prophecies, but they refused to believe they referred to Jesus whom they had crucified. They didn't want their own people to realise they were responsible for the murder of Jesus who was the anointed Messiah, the Christ of God. Otherwise, the people may have stoned them all to death! So, they wanted Jesus and all his followers to stop believing in Jesus, to stop telling others about Jesus, or to die. As for those Jews and non-Jews who believed in Jesus, who became known as Christians. They accepted both the scriptures of the Hebrews and the teachings of Jesus Christ as all being revelations of God. So today when you open a Christian Bible you will find first the Old Testament of the

Hebrew scriptures, followed by the New Testament of the Christian Scriptures.

Now, when I was studying to be a Lay Minister in the church and read from Luke's gospel, where it is written. *Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he (Jesus) explained to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.* I decided to do some research and find those scriptures, those prophecies of God that spoke about Jesus. Fortunately, I had a Study Bible that not only contained the scriptures like any other Bible. It also had at the bottom of each page, and down the middle of each page, Bible references on the same subject, including prophecies of God both in the Old and New Testaments, linking them both together.

So, I worked through the four gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John, and Acts of The Apostles. Every time I found a reference to a prophecy, I would go to that reference in the Old Testament to see when it was given and how many years before Jesus it had been given. I also looked through pages of the Old Testament, looking for possible prophecies of God that were fulfilled both within the Old Testament and the New Testament. So, over the following pages of this chapter and the rest of this book I have listed the prophecies of God. Of course, the further back in time we go, the trickier it can be to be 100% sure of an exact date. But you will still come to the same conclusion that these prophecies are from God, they are genuine and no one but God could have made them or inserted them into the Old Testament at a later date.

The prophecies of God begin at the beginning of the Bible in Genesis, so I will begin at the beginning and down through history. Showing how the prophecies of God reveal the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

Thousands of years ago God created the heavens and the earth and all that is in them. God had also created the angels in heaven before creating humankind through Adam and Eve. The Bible tells us that the chief archangel who we know as Lucifer, Satan and the Devil wanted to be worshipped like God and have all authority in heaven and on earth.

God had warned Adam not to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil, for if he did then he would die (Genesis 2:16-17). Satan then deceived

Adam and Eve into being disobedient to God by tricking them into eating the fruit from the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil. But God doesn't kill them, instead, we read in Genesis 3:21 that God makes clothing for Adam and Eve from the skins of an animal. What happened is that God should have killed Adam and Eve for their sin against God. But God provided a symbolic covering for their sins, but the animal skins God gave them to wear. God had sacrificed an animal, that died in the place of Adam and Eve. The death of the animal instead of the death of Adam and Eve. This is the first sacrifice provided by God for the sins of men and women. The last sacrifice of God for the sins of men and women will happen thousands of years later by the crucifixion of Jesus Christ. His death on the cross for the sins of the world. As for Satan and those thousands of angels who also rebelled against God by following Satan. They were all cast out of heaven and down to earth.

### **(Prophecy # 2.)**

It is in the Garden of Eden that God delivers a prophecy against Satan. *I will put hostility between you and the woman, and between your offspring and her offspring. He will bruise your head, and you will bruise his heel.*" Genesis 3:15.

The meaning of this scripture is that because of the evil within Satan and his deceiving Adam and Eve into sinning against God. Satan and his angels will always be at war against Eve and her descendants. But there will be one who will be born of a woman whom Satan attacks (Jesus Christ), but Jesus Christ will destroy Satan.

Over the years Adam and Eve and their descendants increased in number, but they also became more rebellious against God. Eventually, some four thousand three hundred years ago God sent a worldwide flood to destroy all human life except Noah and his family. The Bible tells us why. Please note that the Hebrew name for God was Yahweh, so wherever you see the word Yahweh it means God. Some translations of the Bible have automatically translated the word to God, but others like this translation keep the original Hebrew word for God.

<sup>5</sup> *Yahweh saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of man's heart was continually only evil.* <sup>6</sup> *Yahweh was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him in his heart.* <sup>7</sup> *Yahweh said, "I will destroy man whom I have created*

*from the surface of the ground—man, along with animals, creeping things, and birds of the sky—for I am sorry that I have made them.”<sup>8</sup> But Noah found favour in Yahweh’s eyes. Genesis 6:5-8.*

It seems the only people on earth who had not surrendered themselves in rebellion against the Lord God of all creation were Noah and his family. You can read in chapters 6-11 of Genesis how at the instruction of God, Noah builds an ark and Noah, his family and all the animals escape the flood that kills all other life on earth.

Then in chapter 12, we read of a prophecy of God which was given some 3,900 years ago in 1,900 BC (1,900 years before the birth of Jesus Christ). God makes a prophecy and promises to a man called Abram (Abraham).

**(Prophecy # 3.)**

*12 Now Yahweh said to Abram, “Leave your country, and your relatives, and your father’s house, and go to the land that I will show you. <sup>2</sup> I will make of you a great nation. I will bless you and make your name great. You will be a blessing. <sup>3</sup> I will bless those who bless you, and I will curse him who treats you with contempt. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you.” Genesis 12:1-3. (c. 1,900 BC.).*

It is Abram who becomes known as Abraham, who becomes known as the father of the 12 Tribes of Israel. The land that God gave to the descendants of Abraham is the Land of Caanan which we know today as the Nation of Israel. Also, the prophecy and promise of God is that those who bless the descendants of Abraham (the nation of Israel) God will bless and those who curse Israel, God will also Curse. If you read through the history of Abraham and the nation of Israel to this present day, you will find that those who came against Israel were defeated or eventually overthrown and those who blessed Israel, God also blessed.

But the most significant part of this prophecy was that God said to Abram, that through him all families of the world shall be blessed. That blessing of God is because as it is written in the Gospel of Matthew, Jesus Christ is the son of David, the son of Abraham (Matthew 1:1). It is through Jesus Christ a descendant of Abraham that all families in the world are blessed by God.

Some two hundred years later the descendants of Abraham found themselves living in Egypt, and one of Abraham's great-grandsons Joseph became an important advisor to the pharaoh of Egypt. This resulted in Egypt being a blessing to the Hebrews, and God being a blessing to the Egyptians.

Then in Exodus chapter 1, we read that there is a new Pharaoh, and he doesn't know or care anything about Joseph or what he did for Egypt. But he is fearful of Joseph's descendants (who are now known as Hebrews, so-called because of their Hebrew language). So, this pharaoh enslaves the Hebrews and makes them work harder and harder. Then he tells the midwives to kill all the male infants at birth but to spare the girls. Then he commands all his people to take every Hebrew son who is born and cast them into the river!

In Exodus chapter 2, we read of the Hebrew son Moses being born, of his mother making an ark from bulrushes, and sailing him off on the river! As she watches from afar what would happen to Moses, one of the Pharaoh's daughters comes down to the river and sees Moses, and knowing he is a Hebrew child, she has compassion for him and decides to keep Moses for herself. It would be fun to imagine her returning home to her father the Pharaoh and saying "Guess what I found today? And I'm keeping him!"

Moses grows into a young man, and one day sees an Egyptian beating one of the Hebrews. Moses is angered by this and strikes the Egyptian, killing him. As a result, Moses has to flee for his life and ends up becoming a shepherd for his father-in-law. Exodus chapter 3 - One day, while tending the sheep, he sees a burning bush, but it is not being consumed by the fire. When he goes to investigate, it is God who speaks to Moses from the burning bush, and tells Moses that He is going to use Moses to deliver the Hebrews out of slavery from the Egyptians.

God tells Moses that He wants him to go with Aron to tell the Pharaoh to let all the Hebrews go into the wilderness and worship God. And God now gives two prophecies to Moses.

**(Prophecy # 4.)**

<sup>20</sup> *I will reach out my hand and strike Egypt with all my wonders which I will do among them, and after that he will let you go.* Exodus 3:20. (c. 1,400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 5.)**

<sup>21</sup> *I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians, and it will happen that when you go, you shall not go empty-handed.* <sup>22</sup> *But every woman shall ask of her neighbour, and of her who visits her house, jewels of silver, jewels of gold, and clothing. You shall put them on your sons, and on your daughters. You shall plunder the Egyptians.*” Exodus 3:21-22. (c. 1,400 BC).

While the Egyptians worshipped many things as gods, including their pharaoh, he was never going to let the Hebrew slaves go free – why should he, he considered himself a god.

What follows is what is commonly known as the Ten Plagues on Egypt. Moses asks the Pharaoh to let the people go. He refuses, and God sends a plague on the Egyptians, and this is repeated nine more times. Each of the ten plagues is God’s way of ridiculing the pharaoh and the gods of the Egyptians because in each case, their so-called gods should have been able to protect them.

The First Plague – Waters and rivers turned to blood.

Second Plague – Frogs – everywhere

Third Plague – Lice

Fourth Plague – Flies

Fifth Plague – Diseased cattle

Sixth Plague – Boils on man and beast

Seventh Plague – Hail that killed man and beast

Eighth Plague – Locusts

Ninth Plague – A thick darkness over the land.

Tenth Plague – Death of every firstborn among the Egyptians

The death of a son or daughter – no matter what their age is a terrible thing to suffer. And this last plague on the Egyptians affected every Egyptian family, including the Pharaoh. But God had promised to bless those who bless the descendants of Abraham and curse those who curse them. Considering the Pharaoh commanded his people to cast the male-born infant Hebrew children into the river, we can see the reality of God’s curse on the people – exactly as He said He would do. The final humiliating

defeat for the pharaoh came as a result of letting the Hebrews go free and then sending his army after them to kill them and or enslave them once again. This resulted in his army being drowned crossing the Red Sea by the hand of God.

## The Passover

The Passover is an annual Jewish festival to commemorate the Ten Plagues on the Egyptians that led to freedom for the Hebrew slaves. It is a celebration that has been observed by the Jews every year since the time of Moses, for some 3,400 years to our present day.

It is also a celebration that links the first sacrifice by God in the Garden of Eden for Adam and Eve. It links the time Abraham offered his son Isaac as a sacrifice, and God provided the sacrifice. And it links all of these events with the sacrificial death of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago, and the service of Holy Communion that we celebrate in churches around the world today. So, this is an important festival!

You can read about the first Passover in Exodus chapter 12. God had told Moses to tell the Hebrews that each family had to take a lamb, kill it and roast it whole. Take some of its blood, and daub it on the doorposts and lintel of the houses where they eat it. The family would eat the lamb, and anything left over was to be consumed by the fire (this is a sacrificial meal). That night God passed through the land, and any house that did not have the blood of the lamb on the doorposts and lintel, God killed the firstborn in that house. But when God saw the blood of the lamb on the doorposts and lintel, God would pass over that house. The Hebrew slaves were saved by the blood of the lamb – as Christians today are saved by the Blood of the Lamb of God – Jesus Christ.

Now, as the Hebrews travelled out of Egypt into the wilderness, and on to the Promised Land of Canaan, you might think that these Hebrews would be grateful to God. After all, God showed Himself to be greater than any of the so-called gods of the Egyptians. God had set them free with the most amazing miracles, and yet they began to complain – we have no bread, we have no meat, we have no water, moan, moan, moan! God provides bread Manna from Heaven, He provides meat – flocks of small



birds descend upon them nearly every day and makes water spring from out of a rock. And where are they happy? No! In Numbers 21 we read –

*<sup>4</sup> They travelled from Mount Hor by the way to the Red Sea, to go around the land of Edom. The soul of the people was very discouraged because of the journey. <sup>5</sup> The people spoke against God and against Moses: “Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no bread, there is no water, and our soul loathes this disgusting food!”*

*<sup>6</sup> Yahweh sent venomous snakes among the people, and they bit the people. Many people of Israel died. <sup>7</sup> The people came to Moses, and said, “We have sinned, because we have spoken against Yahweh and against you. Pray to Yahweh, that he take away the serpents from us.” Moses prayed for the people.*

*<sup>8</sup> Yahweh said to Moses, “Make a venomous snake, and set it on a pole. It shall happen that everyone who is bitten, when he sees it, shall live.” <sup>9</sup> Moses made a serpent of bronze, and set it on the pole. If a serpent had bitten any man, when he looked at the serpent of bronze, he lived. Numbers 21:4-9*

This was a prophetic act of what was to come 1,400 years later when Jesus Christ died on the cross for the sins of mankind. Here, the people of Israel (Hebrews) sinned against God and His anointed (Moses). The penalty for sin is death (as it was in the Garden of Eden for Adam and Eve). The serpent represented sin (serpent = Satan), the sin of the people, and raised up on a pole. The ones who were bitten by the serpents had sinned. They were under the penalty of death – they were going to die in their sins. When they looked at the serpent raised high on the pole, they were acknowledging their sin against God. This was an act of repentance on their behalf, and they were sorry for their sin against God and His anointed (Moses). Today, we can spiritually go to the cross on which Jesus died. He took the sins of the world upon Himself – He took our sins. And when we come to Jesus in repentance for our sins against God and His anointed (Jesus Christ), we receive total and complete forgiveness. The penalty for sin is still death, but in Jesus Christ, we have healing, forgiveness, and life – life eternal.

During their time in the wilderness, God gave Moses the Ten Commandments and laws on how the people were to obey God.

The Ten Commandments.

*20 God spoke all these words, saying, <sup>2</sup> “I am Yahweh your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

*<sup>3</sup> “You shall have no other gods before me.*

*<sup>4</sup> “You shall not make for yourselves an idol, nor any image of anything that is in the heavens above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: <sup>5</sup> you shall not bow yourself down to them, nor serve them, for I, Yahweh your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children, on the third and on the fourth generation of those who hate me, <sup>6</sup> and showing loving kindness to thousands of those who love me and keep my commandments.*

*<sup>7</sup> “You shall not misuse the name of Yahweh your God<sup>l</sup> for Yahweh will not hold him guiltless who misuses his name.*

*<sup>8</sup> “Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. <sup>9</sup> You shall labour six days, and do all your work, <sup>10</sup> but the seventh day is a Sabbath to Yahweh your God. You shall not do any work in it, you, nor your son, nor your daughter, your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your livestock, nor your stranger who is within your gates; <sup>11</sup> for in six days Yahweh made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day; therefore Yahweh blessed the Sabbath day, and made it holy.*

*<sup>12</sup> “Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long in the land which Yahweh your God gives you.*

*<sup>13</sup> “You shall not murder.*

*<sup>14</sup> “You shall not commit adultery.*

*<sup>15</sup> “You shall not steal.*

*<sup>16</sup> “You shall not give false testimony against your neighbour.*

<sup>17</sup> *“You shall not covet your neighbour’s house. You shall not covet your neighbour’s wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbour’s.” Exodus 20:1-17*

Then follows more detailed instructions on the laws God expects of His people. This is followed by God telling Moses of the land the people would inhabit by driving out the people who lived there. The boundaries described are what we know today as the Land of Israel. God then has Moses build an altar, and oxen are killed and offered as a burnt sacrifice to God. The blood of the ox is sprinkled on the altar and then on the people, as a sign of a blood covenant (agreement) between God and His people.

Then Moses and the leaders are invited up the mountain where they enjoy a meal with God. This event, some 1,400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ, links us to Jesus Christ, the Last Supper, and the blood of the New Covenant. Both these events link us to the Holy Communion Service held in church most Sundays, and the promise of God to His people. Here is the promise and prophecy of God with His people.

**(Prophecy # 6.)**

<sup>20</sup> *“Behold, I send an angel before you, to keep you by the way, and to bring you into the place which I have prepared.”* <sup>21</sup> *Pay attention to him, and listen to his voice. Don’t provoke him, for he will not pardon your disobedience, for my name is in him.* <sup>22</sup> *But if you indeed listen to his voice, and do all that I speak, then I will be an enemy to your enemies, and an adversary to your adversaries.* <sup>23</sup> *For my angel shall go before you, and bring you into the Amorite, the Hittite, the Perizzite, the Canaanite, the Hivite, and the Jebusite; and I will cut them off.* <sup>24</sup> *You shall not bow down to their gods, nor serve them, nor follow their practices, but you shall utterly overthrow them and demolish their pillars.* <sup>25</sup> *You shall serve Yahweh your God, and he will bless your bread and your water, and I will take sickness away from among you.* <sup>26</sup> *No one will miscarry or be barren in your land. I will fulfil the number of your days.* <sup>27</sup> *I will send my terror before you, and will confuse all the people to whom you come, and I will make all your enemies turn their backs to you.* <sup>28</sup> *I will send the hornet before you, which will drive out the Hivite, the Canaanite, and the Hittite, from before you.* <sup>29</sup> *I will not drive them out from before you in one year, lest the land become desolate, and the animals of the field multiply against you.* <sup>30</sup> *Little by little I will drive them out from before you, until you have*

increased and inherit the land. <sup>31</sup> I will set your border from the Red Sea even to the sea of the Philistines, and from the wilderness to the River; for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand, and you shall drive them out before you. <sup>32</sup> You shall make no covenant with them, nor with their gods. <sup>33</sup> They shall not dwell in your land, lest they make you sin against me, for if you serve their gods, it will surely be a snare to you. ”

**24** He said to Moses, “Come up to Yahweh, you, and Aaron, Nadab, and Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel; and worship from a distance. <sup>2</sup> Moses alone shall come near to Yahweh, but they shall not come near. The people shall not go up with him. ”

<sup>3</sup> Moses came and told the people all Yahweh’s words, and all the ordinances; and all the people answered with one voice, and said, “All the words which Yahweh has spoken will we do. ”

<sup>4</sup> Moses wrote all Yahweh’s words, then rose up early in the morning and built an altar at the base of the mountain, with twelve pillars for the twelve tribes of Israel. <sup>5</sup> He sent young men of the children of Israel, who offered burnt offerings and sacrificed peace offerings of cattle to Yahweh. <sup>6</sup> Moses took half of the blood and put it in basins, and half of the blood he sprinkled on the altar. <sup>7</sup> He took the book of the covenant and read it in the hearing of the people, and they said, “We will do all that Yahweh has said, and be obedient. ”

<sup>8</sup> Moses took the blood, and sprinkled it on the people, and said, “Look, this is the blood of the covenant, which Yahweh has made with you concerning all these words. ”

<sup>9</sup> Then Moses, Aaron, Nadab, Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel went up. <sup>10</sup> They saw the God of Israel. Under his feet was like a paved work of sapphire stone, like the skies for clearness. <sup>11</sup> He didn’t lay his hand on the nobles of the children of Israel. They saw God, and ate and drank.

<sup>12</sup> Yahweh said to Moses, “Come up to me on the mountain, and stay here, and I will give you the stone tablets with the law and the commands that I have written, that you may teach them. ”

<sup>13</sup> Moses rose up with Joshua, his servant, and Moses went up onto God’s Mountain. <sup>14</sup> He said to the elders, “Wait here for us, until we come again to you. Behold, Aaron and Hur are with you. Whoever is involved in a dispute can go to them. ”

<sup>15</sup> Moses went up on the mountain, and the cloud covered the mountain. <sup>16</sup> Yahweh’s glory settled on Mount Sinai, and the cloud covered it six days. The seventh day he called to Moses out of the middle of the cloud. <sup>17</sup> The appearance of Yahweh’s glory was like devouring fire on the top of the mountain in the eyes of the children of Israel. <sup>18</sup> Moses entered

*into the middle of the cloud, and went up on the mountain; and Moses was on the mountain forty days and forty nights. Exodus 23:20-33 – 24:1-18.*

God made His promise to be with His people and protect them and instructed Moses to build a portable temple which would go with them wherever God led them. This temple is designed to be a tabernacle, a dwelling place for God. So, this tabernacle is a visible sign for the people that the Lord God of all creation is with His people. God gave Moses detailed instructions as to the design and construction of the temple, and of the worship and sacrifices to be offered to God.

The journey from Egypt to the Promised Land of Canaan should have been completed within weeks but turned out to be forty years! In Numbers chapters 13 and 14, we read that Moses sent out spies to survey the land of Canaan. This was because the land was inhabited with the descendants of Ham who would naturally fight against any invasion of their land by the people of Israel. The spies returned to Moses and told him that yes, the land was good – flowing with milk and honey! But some of the spies said the land was inhabited by giants, the descendants of Anak, and the people of Israel were like grasshoppers in comparison to them. Others disagreed with them and were willing to go and take the land by force. On account of the sin of those who were afraid to enter the Promised Land of Canaan, God made the people remain in the wilderness for forty years, until all those who spoke against going into the land, died in the wilderness. These Hebrew Children of Israel were learning to understand that not only would the Lord God of all creation bless them and protect them, but God would also punish disobedience and idolatry with death.

Jesus Christ, the fulfilment of the prophecies of God.

Now we look at the amazing prophecies of God, that foretell of the birth, life, ministry, death and resurrection of Jesus Christ – who is ‘God with us’. We also learn how it would have been impossible for these prophecies to have been added at a later date. The only way the prophecies could have been made is by God, who not only knows the future but also decides the future thousands of years in advance.

Moses did not lead the people of Israel into the land of Canaan, but he anointed Joshua as leader of the people, and in Deuteronomy 18:15-19 we read of a prophetic conversation between Moses and God

**(Prophecy # 7.)**

<sup>15</sup> *Yahweh your God will raise up to you a prophet from among you, of your brothers, like me. You shall listen to him.* <sup>16</sup> *This is according to all that you desired of Yahweh your God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, "Let me not hear again Yahweh my God's voice, neither let me see this great fire anymore, that I not die."*

<sup>17</sup> *Yahweh said to me, "They have well said that which they have spoken."* <sup>18</sup> *I will raise them up a prophet from among their brothers, like you. I will put my words in his mouth, and he shall speak to them all that I shall command him.* Deuteronomy 18:15-18. (c.1,400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 8.)**

<sup>19</sup> *It shall happen, that whoever will not listen to my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him.* Deuteronomy 18:19. (c.1,400 BC).

The one who is speaking to Moses and giving the prophecy is God. The one who will fulfil this prophecy is Jesus Christ, who is God. Following the death of Moses, there were one thousand, four hundred years before the birth of Jesus Christ. It would have been impossible to add this prophecy of God into the scriptures after the event (after 1,400 years of history). Also, as we look back on the life of Moses and Jesus Christ, we can see that in and through Moses, God was preparing the world of the real evidence for God. God was preparing humankind for the most important event in history since the beginning of creation. That event was the birth of Jesus Christ in Bethlehem two thousand years ago, of Jesus Christ, who is God with us.

Here is the list of how Jesus Christ and Moses were alike.

1. Moses was considered a deliverer of God's children. Jesus was considered the deliverer for God's children.
2. Moses was born in a land where his people were oppressed by the Egyptian Pharaoh.

Jesus was born in a land where His people were oppressed by King Herod and the Roman Empire.

3. At the time of Moses' birth, the Pharaoh ordered the death of newborn male babies. Exodus 1:15-16.

When Jesus was born, King Herod ordered the killing of all the infant males. Matthew 2:16-18.

4. God called Moses out of Egypt. Exodus 3:11-12.

God called Jesus out of Egypt. Matthew 2:13-15.

5. Moses fasted 40 days when receiving the Ten Commandments. Exodus 34:28.

Jesus fasted 40 days before being tempted by the devil. Matthew 4:1-2.

6. Moses spoke directly with God face to face Numbers 12:7-8.

Jesus spoke directly with God face to face John 1:18.

7. Moses performed miracles.

Jesus performed miracles.

8. Moses was the leader of the 12 tribes of Israel.

Jesus was the leader of His 12 disciples.

9. Moses appointed 70 to minister. Numbers 11:16-17.

Jesus appointed 70 to minister. Luke 10:1.

10. Moses gave the Ten Commandments. Exodus 20:1-17.

Jesus gave a new commandment – to love one another. John 13:34-35.

11. Moses had followers who rebelled against him and died. Numbers 21:5-7.

Jesus had a follower (Judas), who rebelled against Him and died. Matthew

27:3-5.

12. Moses had people who wanted to stone him to death. Exodus 17:4.

Jesus had people who wanted to stone Him to death. John 8:59.

13. Moses led his people to the Promised Land of Canaan.

Jesus leads His people into the Promised Land of Heaven.

14. Moses parted the Red Sea. Exodus 14:21.

Jesus calmed the sea. Mark 4:35-41.

15. Moses was a shepherd. Exodus 3:1.

Jesus is the Good Shepherd. John 10:11-18.

16. Moses fed thousands with bread from heaven. Exodus 16:1-36.

Jesus fed thousands with bread through His miracles. Matthew 14:15-21 and Matthew 15:32-38.

Jesus said *“I am the bread of life. Whoever comes to me will not be hungry, and whoever believes in me will never be thirsty.”* John 6:35.

17. Moses gave water to the women at the well. Exodus 2:15-17.

Jesus offered the woman at the well waters of everlasting life. John 4:1-42.

18. Moses washed Aaron and his sons with water. Leviticus 8:6.

Jesus washed His disciple's feet. John 13:3-17.

19. Moses gave the law on a mountain. Exodus 19:20 – 20:18.

Jesus gave the Sermon on The Mount. Matthew 5:1 - 7:29.

20. Moses lifted up a bronze serpent so that those who had sinned against God would be saved and healed. Numbers 21:5-9.

Jesus was lifted up on a cross, so that those who had sinned against God



would be saved and healed. John 3:13-16.

21. Moses turned water into blood. Exodus 7:14-21.

Jesus turned water into wine. John 2:1-11.

22. Moses instituted the Passover Festival. Exodus 12:1-14.

Jesus instituted the Lord's Supper. Matthew 26:26-30,

1 Corinthians 11:23-26.

23. Moses and the people provided the Passover Lamb. Exodus 12.

Jesus was the Passover lamb provided by God. John 1:29-34.

24. Moses' face shone while talking with God on Mount Sinai. Exodus 34:29.

Jesus' face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as light when He became transfigured high on the mountain. Also, Elijah and Moses appeared with Jesus, as witnessed by Peter James and John. They also heard God speak to them about Jesus *"This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Listen to him."* Elijah represented the prophets in the Old Testament, and Moses the Law, yet God was telling these disciples that Jesus was more important than Moses and Elijah. Matthew 17:1-13.

25. Moses' burial was attended by an angel Jude 9.

Jesus' burial was attended by an angel Matthew 28:2, 5-6.

26. Moses said God would send another like Him (Jesus Christ). Deuteronomy 18:15-19.

Jesus said God would send another like him (The Holy Spirit). Luke 24:49.

27. Moses gave the covenant of God with the sprinkled blood of the oxen. Exodus 24:8.

Jesus gave the new covenant of God with His own blood. Luke 22:20.

28. Following the covenant with God, Moses and the elders had a meal with God. Exodus 24:9-11.

Following the new covenant with God – Jesus Christ and His disciples had the Passover meal together. Luke 22:15.

29. Moses gave prophecies with 100% accuracy.

Jesus gave prophecies with 100% accuracy.

30. Moses was a prophet of God.

Jesus Christ is the prophet of God.

Every one of these similarities was, in fact, a prophetic act, planned and prepared by God in and through Moses, that would find their fulfilment in Jesus Christ.

Could all of these similarities be just a coincidence? It would be impossible. And has anyone else in history fulfilled this prophecy more than Jesus Christ? No, they have not. This prophecy of God, given by God some 1,400 years before fulfilment, demonstrates that the history of mankind is unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God. For only God could have given those prophecies.

At the beginning of the Gospel of John, John describes Jesus as the Word. This means that every word that Jesus Christ spoke was the very Word of God.

*1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made through him. Without him, nothing was made that has been made. John 1:1-3*

In addition to the prophecy of God being fulfilled by Jesus Christ being like Moses, more prophecies in the Old Testament refer to Jesus Christ. These are about his birth, life, death, and resurrection, and all of them were written between 400 and 1,400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 9.)**

God told Micah: The Messiah would be born in Bethlehem.

*But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah,*

*being small among the clans of Judah,*

*out of you one will come out to me that is to be ruler in Israel;*

*whose goings out are from of old, from ancient times.* Micah 5:2. (c. 700 BC).

Fulfilled in Matthew

*2 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of King Herod, behold, wise men from the east came to Jerusalem.* Matthew 2:1.

**(Prophecy # 10.)**

God told Isaiah: That Jesus would be born of a virgin.

*<sup>14</sup> Therefore the Lord himself will give you a sign. Behold, the virgin will conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. (God with us).* Isaiah 7:14. (c. 700 BC).

**(Prophecy # 11.)**

*<sup>26</sup> Now in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, <sup>27</sup> to a virgin pledged to be married to a man whose name was Joseph, of David's house. The virgin's name was Mary. <sup>28</sup> Having come in, the angel said to her, "Rejoice, you highly favoured one! The Lord is with you. Blessed are you among women!"*

*<sup>29</sup> But when she saw him, she was greatly troubled at the saying, and considered what kind of salutation this might be. <sup>30</sup> The angel said to her, "Don't be afraid, Mary, for you have found favour with God. <sup>31</sup> Behold, you will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and shall name him 'Jesus.' <sup>32</sup> He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, <sup>33</sup> and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever. There will be no end to his Kingdom."*

*<sup>34</sup> Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, seeing I am a virgin?"*

*<sup>35</sup> The angel answered her, "The Holy Spirit will come on you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. Therefore also the holy one who is born from you will be called the Son of God. Luke 1:26-35.*

Through the power of God, Moses did many miracles, and you can read about them in the second book of the Bible called Exodus. The prophecy of God also tells us that Jesus will perform miracles in the power of God.

**(Prophecy # 12.)**

*<sup>18</sup> In that day, the deaf will hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind will see out of obscurity and out of darkness.*

*Tell those who have a fearful heart, "Be strong!*

*Don't be afraid!*

*Behold, your God will come with vengeance, God's retribution.*

*He will come and save you.*

*<sup>5</sup> Then the eyes of the blind will be opened,  
and the ears of the deaf will be unstopped.*

*<sup>6</sup> Then the lame man will leap like a deer,  
and the tongue of the mute will sing;  
for waters will break out in the wilderness,  
and streams in the desert.*

*And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness.... Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be opened.*

*<sup>6</sup> Then shall the lame man leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb shall sing. Isaiah 29:18, and 35:5-6. (c. 700 B.C.).*

Here are a few of the miracles of Jesus Christ.

Jesus healed a man who was born blind. John 5:1-9.

Jesus healed two blind men. Matthew 20:29-34.

Jesus healed a blind man. Mark 8:22-26.

Jesus healed a lame woman. Luke 13:11-13.

Jesus healed the demon-possessed. Matthew 8:28-34, 9:32-34, 12:22-32, 15:21-28. Mark 1:23-27. Luke 4:41, 16:9.

Jesus healed a paralysed man. Luke:18-25.

At a wedding, Jesus turned more than 120 gallons of water into wine. John 2:1-11.

Jesus healed ten men of leprosy. Luke 17:11-19.

Jesus healed all who came to Him, and He also raised three people from the dead back to life again.

The son of a widow raised from the dead. Luke 7:11-15.

Jarius's daughter was raised from the dead. Luke 8:41-56.

Lazarus was raised from the dead after being laid in a tomb for four days. John 11:1-44.

Jesus fed five thousand people with five loaves of bread and two small fish. John 6:5-13.

Jesus fed four thousand people with seven loaves of bread and a few fish. Matthew 15:32-38.

Jesus walked on the sea. Matthew 14:22-33.

In his gospel, John, says of Jesus. <sup>25</sup> *There are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they would all be written, I suppose that even the world itself wouldn't have room for the books that would be written.* John 21:25.

The writers of the four gospels in the New Testament of the Christian Holy Bible, recorded an overwhelming number of miracles that Jesus performed, and listed above are just a few examples to show us what Jesus said and did.

More prophecies of God about Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 13.)**

God told the psalmist: The Messiah will speak in parables.

<sup>2</sup> *I will open my mouth in a parable.*

*I will utter dark sayings of old.* Psalm 78:2. (c. 400 BC).

Fulfilled in Matthew

Matthew 13:10-16.

<sup>10</sup> *The disciples came, and said to him, "Why do you speak to them in parables?"*

<sup>11</sup> *He answered them, "To you it is given to know the mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven, but it is not given to them. <sup>12</sup> For whoever has, to him will be given, and he will have abundance; but whoever doesn't have, from him will be taken away even that which he has. <sup>13</sup> Therefore I speak to them in parables, because seeing they don't see, and hearing, they don't hear, neither do they understand. <sup>14</sup> In them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled, which says,*

*'By hearing you will hear,  
and will in no way understand;*

*Seeing you will see,  
and will in no way perceive;*

<sup>15</sup> *for this people's heart has grown callous,  
their ears are dull of hearing,  
and they have closed their eyes;*

*or else perhaps they might perceive with their eyes,  
hear with their ears,  
understand with their heart,*

*and would turn again,  
and I would heal them. Isaiah 6:9-10.*

**(Prophecy # 14.)**

God told Isaiah that He would send a messenger before the Messiah.

*3 The voice of one who calls out,  
“Prepare the way of Yahweh in the wilderness!  
Make a level highway in the desert for our God. Isaiah 40:3. (c. 700  
BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

*3 In those days, John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of  
Judea, saying, <sup>2</sup> “Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand!”  
Matthew 3:1-2.*

When Jesus began His ministry teaching in the synagogues in Galilee, He was well-received by everyone. Then He came to His hometown of Nazareth.

**(Prophecy # 15.)**

*<sup>14</sup> Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and news about  
him spread through all the surrounding area. <sup>15</sup> He taught in their  
synagogues, being glorified by all.*

*<sup>16</sup> He came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up. He entered, as  
was his custom, into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to  
read. <sup>17</sup> The book of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. He opened  
the book, and found the place where it was written,*

*<sup>18</sup> “The Spirit of the Lord is on me,  
because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor.*

*He has sent me to heal the broken hearted,*

*to proclaim release to the captives,*

*recovering of sight to the blind,*

*to deliver those who are crushed,*

*<sup>19</sup> and to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord. Isaiah 61:1-2.*

*<sup>20</sup> He closed the book, gave it back to the attendant, and sat down. The  
eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. <sup>21</sup> He began to tell  
them, “Today, this Scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing.” Luke  
4:14-21*

The scripture that Jesus read from was Isaiah 49:8-9, the prophecy God gave to Isaiah c. 700 BC. And in saying that the scriptures had been

fulfilled in their hearing, Jesus was telling the people that He was the long-awaited Messiah, the Christ of God. The people were so angry with Jesus, that they wanted to take Him and throw Him off a cliff and kill Him! But Jesus passed through the midst of them and went on His way.

Jesus had been healing people of every kind of sickness and disability, and some He healed on the Sabbath day – which the Jewish leaders said was against the Law. However, what angered these religious leaders was that the things Jesus said that made him equal to God. Even though Jesus told the truth, they did not believe him and accused Jesus of blasphemy which according to the law was punishable by death. It is for this reason, Jesus claiming equality with God that led to Jesus being crucified unto death.

In John 5:16-18 we read.

*<sup>16</sup> For this cause the Jews persecuted Jesus, and sought to kill him, because he did these things on the Sabbath. <sup>17</sup> But Jesus answered them, "My Father is still working, so I am working, too." <sup>18</sup> For this cause therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill him, because he not only broke the Sabbath, but also called God his own Father, making himself equal with God. John 5:16-18.*

Another time, Jesus claimed Himself equal with God. Jesus said.

*<sup>30</sup> I and the Father are one."*

*<sup>31</sup> Therefore the Jews took up stones again to stone him. <sup>32</sup> Jesus answered them, "I have shown you many good works from my Father. For which of those works do you stone me?"*

*<sup>33</sup> The Jews answered him, "We don't stone you for a good work, but for blasphemy: because you, being a man, make yourself God." John 10:30-33.*

Also in Mark 14:61-64

*<sup>61</sup> But he stayed quiet, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, "Are you the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?"*

*<sup>62</sup> Jesus said, "I am. You will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of the sky."*

<sup>63</sup> *The high priest tore his clothes, and said, "What further need have we of witnesses?"* <sup>64</sup> *You have heard the blasphemy! What do you think?"*  
*They all condemned him to be worthy of death. Mark 14:61-64*

When Jesus referred to himself as the Son of Man, he is not saying that he was just another man, but referring to the scriptures in Daniel – <sup>13</sup> *"I saw in the night visions, and behold, there came with the clouds of the sky one like a son of man, and he came even to the ancient of days, and they brought him near before him."* <sup>14</sup> *Dominion was given him, and glory, and a kingdom, that all the peoples, nations, and languages should serve him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which will not pass away, and his kingdom one that which will not be destroyed. Daniel 7:13-14.*

The high priest questioning Jesus would have known that the Ancient of Days is God, and the one like a son of man is Jesus who will return in power and glory.

Also, in John 8:57-59, Jesus speaks of his equality with God and tells his disciples of the promise of the Holy Spirit of God that Jesus will send to them.

<sup>57</sup> *The Jews therefore said to him, "You are not yet fifty years old! Have you seen Abraham?"*

<sup>58</sup> *Jesus said to them, "Most certainly, I tell you, before Abraham came into existence, I AM."*

<sup>59</sup> *Therefore they took up stones to throw at him, but Jesus was hidden, and went out of the temple, having gone through the middle of them, and so passed by.*

When Jesus refers to himself as I AM, he is not only saying that he existed before Abraham but as God, who referred to Himself as - *I AM WHO I AM* in Exodus 3:14.

In John 14:1 – 16:15. Jesus not only makes himself equal with God, but also promises to send his followers the Holy Spirit of God (Comforter) to be with them.



*14 "Don't let your heart be troubled. Believe in God. Believe also in me. <sup>2</sup> In my Father's house are many homes. If it weren't so, I would have told you. I am going to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup> If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and will receive you to myself; that where I am, you may be there also. <sup>4</sup> You know where I go, and you know the way."*

*<sup>5</sup> Thomas said to him, "Lord, we don't know where you are going. How can we know the way?"*

*<sup>6</sup> Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father, except through me. <sup>7</sup> If you had known me, you would have known my Father also. From now on, you know him, and have seen him."*

*<sup>8</sup> Philip said to him, "Lord, show us the Father, and that will be enough for us."*

*<sup>9</sup> Jesus said to him, "Have I been with you such a long time, and do you not know me, Philip? He who has seen me has seen the Father. How do you say, 'Show us the Father?' <sup>10</sup> Don't you believe that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I tell you, I speak not from myself; but the Father who lives in me does his works. <sup>11</sup> Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me; or else believe me for the very works' sake. <sup>12</sup> Most certainly I tell you, he who believes in me, the works that I do, he will do also; and he will do greater works than these, because I am going to my Father. <sup>13</sup> Whatever you will ask in my name, I will do it, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. <sup>14</sup> If you will ask anything in my name, I will do it. <sup>15</sup> If you love me, keep my commandments. <sup>16</sup> I will pray to the Father, and he will give you another Counsellor, that he may be with you forever: <sup>17</sup> the Spirit of truth, whom the world can't receive; for it doesn't see him and doesn't know him. You know him, for he lives with you, and will be in you. <sup>18</sup> I will not leave you orphans. I will come to you. <sup>19</sup> Yet a little while, and the world will see me no more; but you will see me. Because I live, you will live also. <sup>20</sup> In that day you will know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. <sup>21</sup> One who has my commandments and keeps them, that person is one who loves me. One who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him, and will reveal myself to him."*

*<sup>22</sup> Judas (not Iscariot) said to him, "Lord, what has happened that you are about to reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?"*

<sup>23</sup> Jesus answered him, "If a man loves me, he will keep my word. My Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our home with him. <sup>24</sup> He who doesn't love me doesn't keep my words. The word which you hear isn't mine, but the Father's who sent me. <sup>25</sup> I have said these things to you while still living with you. <sup>26</sup> But the Counsellor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things, and will remind you of all that I said to you. <sup>27</sup> Peace I leave with you. My peace I give to you; not as the world gives, I give to you. Don't let your heart be troubled, neither let it be fearful. <sup>28</sup> You heard how I told you, 'I go away, and I come to you.' If you loved me, you would have rejoiced, because I said 'I am going to my Father;' for the Father is greater than I. <sup>29</sup> Now I have told you before it happens so that when it happens, you may believe. <sup>30</sup> I will no more speak much with you, for the prince of the world comes, and he has nothing in me. <sup>31</sup> But that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father commanded me, even so I do. Arise, let's go from here.

**15** "I am the true vine, and my Father is the farmer. <sup>2</sup> Every branch in me that doesn't bear fruit, he takes away. Every branch that bears fruit, he prunes, that it may bear more fruit. <sup>3</sup> You are already pruned clean because of the word which I have spoken to you. <sup>4</sup> Remain in me, and I in you. As the branch can't bear fruit by itself unless it remains in the vine, so neither can you, unless you remain in me. <sup>5</sup> I am the vine. You are the branches. He who remains in me and I in him bears much fruit, for apart from me you can do nothing. <sup>6</sup> If a man doesn't remain in me, he is thrown out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them, throw them into the fire, and they are burned. <sup>7</sup> If you remain in me, and my words remain in you, you will ask whatever you desire, and it will be done for you.

<sup>8</sup> "In this my Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; and so you will be my disciples. <sup>9</sup> Even as the Father has loved me, I also have loved you. Remain in my love. <sup>10</sup> If you keep my commandments, you will remain in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and remain in his love. <sup>11</sup> I have spoken these things to you, that my joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be made full.

<sup>12</sup> "This is my commandment, that you love one another, even as I have loved you. <sup>13</sup> Greater love has no one than this, that someone lay down his life for his friends. <sup>14</sup> You are my friends, if you do whatever I command you. <sup>15</sup> No longer do I call you servants, for the servant doesn't know what his lord does. But I have called you friends, for everything that I heard from my Father, I have made known to you. <sup>16</sup> You didn't choose me, but I

*chose you and appointed you, that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain; that whatever you will ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you.*

<sup>17</sup> *"I command these things to you, that you may love one another. <sup>18</sup> If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me before it hated you. <sup>19</sup> If you were of the world, the world would love its own. But because you are not of the world, since I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. <sup>20</sup> Remember the word that I said to you: 'A servant is not greater than his lord.' John 13:16 If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you. If they kept my word, they will also keep yours. <sup>21</sup> But they will do all these things to you for my name's sake, because they don't know him who sent me. <sup>22</sup> If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have had sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin. <sup>23</sup> He who hates me, hates my Father also. <sup>24</sup> If I hadn't done among them the works which no one else did, they wouldn't have had sin. But now they have seen and also hated both me and my Father. <sup>25</sup> But this happened so that the word may be fulfilled which was written in their law, 'They hated me without a cause.'*

<sup>26</sup> *"When the Counsellor has come, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth, who proceeds from the Father, he will testify about me. <sup>27</sup> You will also testify, because you have been with me from the beginning.*

**16** *"I have said these things to you so that you wouldn't be caused to stumble. <sup>2</sup> They will put you out of the synagogues. Yes, the time comes that whoever kills you will think that he offers service to God. <sup>3</sup> They will do these things because they have not known the Father, nor me. <sup>4</sup> But I have told you these things, so that when the time comes, you may remember that I told you about them. I didn't tell you these things from the beginning, because I was with you. <sup>5</sup> But now I am going to him who sent me, and none of you asks me, 'Where are you going?' <sup>6</sup> But because I have told you these things, sorrow has filled your heart. <sup>7</sup> Nevertheless I tell you the truth: It is to your advantage that I go away, for if I don't go away, the Counsellor won't come to you. But if I go, I will send him to you. <sup>8</sup> When he has come, he will convict the world about sin, about righteousness, and about judgment; <sup>9</sup> about sin, because they don't believe in me; <sup>10</sup> about righteousness, because I am going to my Father, and you won't see me any more; <sup>11</sup> about judgment, because the prince of this world has been judged.*

<sup>12</sup> “I still have many things to tell you, but you can’t bear them now. <sup>13</sup> However when he, the Spirit of truth, has come, he will guide you into all truth, for he will not speak from himself; but whatever he hears, he will speak. He will declare to you things that are coming. <sup>14</sup> He will glorify me, for he will take from what is mine, and will declare it to you. <sup>15</sup> All things that the Father has are mine; therefore I said that he takes of mine and will declare it to you. John 14:1 – 16:15.

Jesus was very critical of the Jewish religious leaders, the scribes and the Pharisees. This is what He told the people about them -

**23** Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to his disciples, <sup>2</sup> saying, “The scribes and the Pharisees sit on Moses’ seat. <sup>3</sup> All things therefore whatever they tell you to observe, observe and do, but don’t do their works; for they say, and don’t do. <sup>4</sup> For they bind heavy burdens that are grievous to be borne, and lay them on men’s shoulders; but they themselves will not lift a finger to help them. <sup>5</sup> But they do all their works to be seen by men. They make their phylacteries broad and enlarge the fringes of their garments, <sup>6</sup> and love the place of honour at feasts, the best seats in the synagogues, <sup>7</sup> the salutations in the marketplaces, and to be called ‘Rabbi, Rabbi by men. Matthew 23:1-7.

<sup>13</sup> “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows’ houses, and as a pretence you make long prayers. Therefore you will receive greater condemnation.

<sup>14</sup> “But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you shut up the Kingdom of Heaven against men; for you don’t enter in yourselves, neither do you allow those who are entering in to enter. <sup>15</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel around by sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of Gehenna as yourselves. Matthew 23:13-15.

<sup>27</sup> “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitened tombs, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead men’s bones and of all uncleanness. <sup>28</sup> Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

<sup>29</sup> “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you build the tombs of the prophets and decorate the tombs of the righteous, <sup>30</sup> and say, ‘If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we wouldn’t have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.’ <sup>31</sup> Therefore you testify to yourselves that you are children of those who killed the prophets. <sup>32</sup> Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers. <sup>33</sup> You serpents, you offspring of vipers, how will you escape the judgment of Gehenna? Matthew 23:27-33.

Here are more prophecies of God about Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 16.)**

God told Zechariah (c. 500 BC) that the Messiah would enter Jerusalem riding the colt of a donkey.

*Rejoice greatly, daughter of Zion!  
Shout, daughter of Jerusalem!  
Behold, your King comes to you!  
He is righteous, and having salvation;  
lowly, and riding on a donkey,  
even on a colt, the foal of a donkey. Zechariah 9:9. (c. 500 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew 21:1-9.

*<sup>21</sup> When they came near to Jerusalem and came to Bethsphage, <sup>[a]</sup> to the Mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, <sup>2</sup> saying to them, “Go into the village that is opposite you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied, and a colt with her. Untie them and bring them to me. <sup>3</sup> If anyone says anything to you, you shall say, ‘The Lord needs them,’ and immediately he will send them.”*

*<sup>4</sup> All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken through the prophet, saying,*

*<sup>5</sup> “Tell the daughter of Zion,  
behold, your King comes to you,  
humble, and riding on a donkey,  
on a colt, the foal of a donkey.”*

*<sup>6</sup> The disciples went and did just as Jesus commanded them, <sup>7</sup> and brought the donkey and the colt and laid their clothes on them; and he sat on them. <sup>8</sup> A very great multitude spread their clothes on the road. Others cut branches from the trees and spread them on the road. <sup>9</sup> The multitudes who*

*went in front of him, and those who followed, kept shouting, “Hosanna to the son of David! Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!”* Psalm 118:26

When the Jews were taken into captivity in Babylon 600 years before the birth of Jesus Christ, Jerusalem was in ruins and the Temple was destroyed. The prophet Daniel received a messenger from God, and it was the angel Gabriel (the same angel Gabriel who came to Mary to announce the virgin birth) who delivered the message.

**(Prophecy # 17.)**

God sent the angel Gabriel with His prophecy, that from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem, until the Messiah (Jesus Christ) there shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks, and then one week that is cut short.

<sup>25</sup> *“Know therefore and discern that from the going out of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem to the Anointed One, the prince, will be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks. It will be built again, with street and moat, even in troubled times.*

Daniel 9:25. (c. 600 BC).

**(Prophecy # 18.)**

And then the Messiah would be cut off, but not for himself, in the middle of the week (middle of the 70<sup>th</sup> week). <sup>6</sup> *After the sixty-two weeks the Anointed One will be cut off, and will have nothing.* Daniel 9:26. (c. 600 BC).

What does this mean? This prophecy was given to Daniel years before Cyrus the Great invades Babylon and gives the order for the Jews to return and rebuild Jerusalem in 457 B.C. So from the command of Cyrus the Great to restore and rebuild Jerusalem and the Temple in 457 B.C., we have  $7 + 62 + 1 = 70$  weeks times 7 days = 490 days = 490 years. And 490 years from 457 B.C. brings us to A.D. 33, the time of Jesus Christ's ministry on earth. It is generally accepted by biblical scholars that Jesus' ministry lasted for 3 ½ years until He was cut off (crucified), but not for Himself, but for the sins of mankind. What this means is that the angel Gabriel delivered a prophecy from God, pinpointing the exact time Jesus Christ would be ministering on earth, and that His ministry would last just 3 ½ years before being cut off – crucified. Furthermore, this prophecy and declared by God through Gabriel some six hundred years before the event!

More prophecies of God concerning the crucifixion of Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 19.)**

God told the psalmist that the Messiah would be betrayed by a friend.

*<sup>9</sup> Yes, my own familiar friend, in whom I trusted,  
who ate bread with me,  
has lifted up his heel against me. Psalm 41:9. (c. 400 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

*<sup>23</sup> He answered, "He who dipped his hand with me in the dish will betray me. Matthew 26:23*

*<sup>7</sup> While he was still speaking, behold, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and clubs, from the chief priests and elders of the people. <sup>48</sup> Now he who betrayed him had given them a sign, saying, "Whoever I kiss, he is the one. Seize him." <sup>49</sup> Immediately he came to Jesus, and said, "Greetings, Rabbi!" and kissed him.  
<sup>50</sup> Jesus said to him, "Friend, why are you here?" Then they came and laid hands on Jesus, and took him. Matthew 26:47-50.*

**(Prophecy # 20.)**

God told Isaiah: The Messiah would be wounded and whipped.

*<sup>5</sup> But he was pierced for our transgressions.  
He was crushed for our iniquities.  
The punishment that brought our peace was on him;  
and by his wounds we are healed. Isaiah 53:5. (c. 700 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

*<sup>26</sup> Then he released Barabbas to them, but Jesus he flogged and delivered to be crucified. Matthew 27:26.*

**(Prophecy # 21.)**

God told Isaiah: The Messiah will be spat upon.

*<sup>6</sup> I gave my back to those who beat me,  
and my cheeks to those who plucked off the hair.  
I didn't hide my face from shame and spitting.  
Isaiah 50:6. (c.700 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

<sup>67</sup> *Then they spat in his face and beat him with their fists, and some slapped him.*

Matthew 26:67.

**(Prophecy # 22.)**

God told Zechariah: The Messiah would be betrayed for thirty pieces of silver.

<sup>12</sup> *I said to them, "If you think it best, give me my wages; and if not, keep them." So they weighed for my wages thirty pieces of silver. Zechariah 11:12. (c. 500 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

<sup>15</sup> *and said, "What are you willing to give me if I deliver him to you?" So they weighed out for him thirty pieces of silver. Matthew 26:15.*

**(Prophecy # 23.)**

God told Zechariah: That thirty pieces of silver would be thrown into the temple and given for a potter's field.

<sup>13</sup> *Yahweh said to me, "Throw it to the potter, the handsome price that I was valued at by them!" I took the thirty pieces of silver, and threw them to the potter, in Yahweh's house. Zechariah 11:13. (c. 500 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

<sup>5</sup> *He threw down the pieces of silver in the sanctuary and departed. Then he went away and hanged himself.*

<sup>6</sup> *The chief priests took the pieces of silver and said, "It's not lawful to put them into the treasury, since it is the price of blood." <sup>7</sup> They took counsel, and bought the potter's field with them to bury strangers in. Matthew 27:5-7.*

**(Prophecy # 24.)**

God told Isaiah: The Messiah would be crucified with thieves.

*Therefore I will give him a portion with the great.*

*He will divide the plunder with the strong;  
because he poured out his soul to death  
and was counted with the transgressors;*



*yet he bore the sins of many  
and made intercession for the transgressors.* Isaiah 53:12. (c. 700).

Fulfilled in Matthew

<sup>38</sup> *Then there were two robbers crucified with him, one on his right hand  
and one on the left.* Matthew 27:38.

**(Prophecy # 25.)**

God told Isaiah: The Messiah would be silent before His accusers.

<sup>7</sup> *He was oppressed,  
yet when he was afflicted he didn't open his mouth.  
As a lamb that is led to the slaughter,  
and as a sheep that before its shearers is silent,  
so he didn't open his mouth.*

<sup>8</sup> *He was taken away by oppression and judgment.  
As for his generation,  
who considered that he was cut off out of the land of the living  
and stricken for the disobedience of my people?* Isaiah 53:7-8. (c. 700 BC).

Fulfilled in Mark

<sup>2</sup> *Pilate asked him, "Are you the King of the Jews?"  
He answered, "So you say."*

<sup>3</sup> *The chief priests accused him of many things. <sup>4</sup> Pilate again asked him,  
"Have you no answer? See how many things they testify against you!"*

<sup>5</sup> *But Jesus made no further answer, so that Pilate marvelled.* Mark 15:2-5.

**(Prophecy # 26.)**

God told the psalmist: The Messiah's hands and feet will be pierced (crucifixion, being nailed to a cross, hands and feet).

I am poured out like water.

All my bones are out of joint.

My heart is like wax.

It is melted within me.

<sup>15</sup> *My strength is dried up like a potsherd.*

My tongue sticks to the roof of my mouth.

You have brought me into the dust of death.

<sup>16</sup> For dogs have surrounded me.  
A company of evildoers have enclosed me.  
They have pierced my hands and feet. <sup>[a]</sup>  
Psalm 22:14-16. (c. 400).

Fulfilled in Mark

<sup>20</sup> *When they had mocked him, they took the purple off him, and put his own garments on him. They led him out to crucify him.* Mark 15:20.

**(Prophecy # 27.)**

God told the psalmist: They divided his garments by casting lots.

<sup>18</sup> *They divide my garments among them.  
They cast lots for my clothing.* Psalm 22:18. (c. 400 BC).

Fulfilled in Mark

<sup>24</sup> *Crucifying him, they parted his garments among them, casting lots on them, what each should take.* Mark 15:24.

**(Prophecy # 28.)**

God told Moses: The Passover Lamb bones would not be broken.

<sup>12</sup> *They shall leave none of it until the morning, nor break a bone of it. According to all the statutes of the Passover they shall keep it.* Numbers 9:12. (c. 1,400 BC).

Fulfilled in John

<sup>31</sup> *Therefore the Jews, because it was the Preparation Day, so that the bodies wouldn't remain on the cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a special one), asked of Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.* <sup>32</sup> *Therefore the soldiers came, and broke the legs of the first, and of the other who was crucified with him;* <sup>33</sup> *but when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was already dead, they didn't break his legs.* <sup>34</sup> *However one of the soldiers pierced his side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.* <sup>35</sup> *He who has seen has testified, and his testimony is true. He knows that he tells the truth, that you may believe.* <sup>36</sup> *For these things happened that the Scripture might be fulfilled, "A bone of him will not be broken."* Exodus 12:46; Numbers 9:12; Psalm 34:20 <sup>37</sup> *Again another Scripture says, "They will look on him whom they pierced."* Zechariah 12:10 John 19:31-37.

**(Prophecy # 29.)**

God told Isaiah in 700 B.C: The Messiah will die as an offering for sin.

*But he was pierced for our transgressions.*

*He was crushed for our iniquities.*

*The punishment that brought our peace was on him;*

*and by his wounds we are healed.*

*<sup>6</sup> All we like sheep have gone astray.*

*Everyone has turned to his own way;*

*and Yahweh has laid on him the iniquity of us all.*

*He was taken away by oppression and judgment.*

*As for his generation,*

*who considered that he was cut off out of the land of the living*

*and stricken for the disobedience of my people?*

*<sup>12</sup> Therefore I will give him a portion with the great.*

*He will divide the plunder with the strong;*

*because he poured out his soul to death*

*and was counted with the transgressors;*

*yet he bore the sins of many*

*and made intercession for the transgressors.*

Isaiah 53:5-6,8,12. (c. 700 BC).

Fulfilled at the crucifixion but stated in 1. Peter.

*<sup>24</sup> He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live to righteousness. You were healed by his wounds. 1 Peter 2:24.*

**(Prophecy # 30.)**

God told Isaiah: The Messiah will be buried in a rich man's tomb.

*<sup>9</sup> They made his grave with the wicked,*

*and with a rich man in his death,*

*although he had done no violence,*

*nor was any deceit in his mouth. Isaiah 53:9. (c. 700 BC).*

Fulfilled in Matthew

*<sup>57</sup> When evening had come, a rich man from Arimathaea named Joseph, who himself was also Jesus' disciple, came. <sup>58</sup> This man went to Pilate and asked for Jesus' body. Then Pilate commanded the body to be given up. <sup>59</sup> Joseph took the body and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth <sup>60</sup> and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had cut out in the rock. Then he rolled a*

*large stone against the door of the tomb, and departed. Matthew 27:57-60.*

Following Jesus' death on the cross another supernatural event occurred. As His birth, life and ministry were all supernatural, this should come as no surprise.

*<sup>51</sup> Behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from the top to the bottom. The earth quaked and the rocks were split. <sup>52</sup> The tombs were opened, and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised; <sup>53</sup> and coming out of the tombs after his resurrection, they entered into the holy city and appeared to many.*

*<sup>54</sup> Now the centurion and those who were with him watching Jesus, when they saw the earthquake and the things that were done, were terrified, saying, "Truly this was the Son of God!" Matthew 27:51-54.*

This was to fulfil another prophecy of God, given to Isaiah 700 years before the birth of Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 31.)**

*Your dead shall live.*

*My dead bodies shall arise.*

*Awake and sing, you who dwell in the dust;*

*for your dew is like the dew of herbs,*

*and the earth will cast out the departed spirits. Isaiah 26:19.*

All of these prophecies were given and recorded in the scriptures between 400 and 1,400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ. Archaeological discoveries prove beyond any doubt these prophecies were recorded during this period, and so could not have been added after the life of Jesus Christ. These prophecies prove that God does exist and that He knows exactly what is going to happen in the future.

Jesus' disciples had spent some three years living with Jesus and learning from Jesus, and just like Jesus they healed the sick and cast out demons. They understood all the prophecies of God from the scriptures that were fulfilled in Jesus birth, life and ministry. But it was the prophecies that Jesus made about his own death and rise to life again that changed their lives forever. Here are the prophecies of Jesus that speak of his death and being raised to life again.

**(Prophecy # 32.)**

*The Jews therefore answered Jesus, "What sign do you show us, seeing that you do these things?" <sup>19</sup> Jesus answered them, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up."*

*<sup>20</sup> The Jews therefore said, "It took forty-six years to build this temple! Will you raise it up in three days?" <sup>21</sup> But he spoke of the temple of his body. <sup>22</sup> When therefore he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he said this, and they believed the Scripture, and the word which Jesus had said. John 2:18-22.*

**(Prophecy # 33.)**

*<sup>39</sup> But he answered them, "An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, but no sign will be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet. <sup>40</sup> For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the huge fish, so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. Matthew 12:39-40.*

**(Prophecy # 34.)**

*From that time, Jesus began to show his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things from the elders, chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up. Matthew 16:21.*

**(Prophecy # 35.)**

*Therefore the Father loves me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again. <sup>18</sup> No one takes it away from me, but I lay it down by myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. I received this commandment from my Father." John 10:17-18.*

Before Jesus was crucified, he was tied to a post and whipped with cords that had sharp pieces of stone and metal designed to cut the flesh. His whole body would have been lashed mercilessly and then he would have been nailed to a cross until he died. There is a film – The Passion of The Christ, which demonstrates the horror of the crucifixion of Jesus.

Following Jesus death on the cross, he was laid in a tomb and a large stone rolled against the entrance to seal the tomb. Then in Luke's Gospel, we read of what happened next, the fulfilment of the prophecies of Jesus being raised from the dead.

*On the first day of the week, at early dawn, they and some others came to the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared. <sup>2</sup> They found the stone rolled away from the tomb. <sup>3</sup> They entered in and didn't find the Lord*

Jesus' body. <sup>4</sup> While they were greatly perplexed about this, behold, two men stood by them in dazzling clothing. <sup>5</sup> Becoming terrified, they bowed their faces down to the earth.

They said to them, "Why do you seek the living among the dead? <sup>6</sup> He isn't here, but is risen. Remember what he told you when he was still in Galilee, <sup>7</sup> saying that the Son of Man must be delivered up into the hands of sinful men and be crucified, and the third day rise again?"

<sup>8</sup> They remembered his words, <sup>9</sup> returned from the tomb, and told all these things to the eleven and to all the rest. <sup>10</sup> Now they were Mary Magdalene, Joanna, and Mary the mother of James. The other women with them told these things to the apostles. <sup>11</sup> These words seemed to them to be nonsense, and they didn't believe them. <sup>12</sup> But Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping and looking in, he saw the strips of linen lying by themselves, and he departed to his home, wondering what had happened.

<sup>13</sup> Behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was sixty stadia from Jerusalem. <sup>14</sup> They talked with each other about all of these things which had happened. <sup>15</sup> While they talked and questioned together, Jesus himself came near, and went with them. <sup>16</sup> But their eyes were kept from recognizing him. <sup>17</sup> He said to them, "What are you talking about as you walk, and are sad?"

<sup>18</sup> One of them, named Cleopas, answered him, "Are you the only stranger in Jerusalem who doesn't know the things which have happened there in these days?" <sup>19</sup> He said to them, "What things?"

They said to him, "The things concerning Jesus, the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; <sup>20</sup> and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him. <sup>21</sup> But we were hoping that it was he who would redeem Israel. Yes, and besides all this, it is now the third day since these things happened. <sup>22</sup> Also, certain women of our company amazed us, having arrived early at the tomb; <sup>23</sup> and when they didn't find his body, they came saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. <sup>24</sup> Some of us went to the tomb, and found it just like the women had said, but they didn't see him."

<sup>25</sup> He said to them, "Foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! <sup>26</sup> Didn't the Christ have to suffer these things and to enter into his glory?" <sup>27</sup> Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he explained to them in all the Scriptures the prophecies of God concerning himself.

<sup>28</sup> They came near to the village where they were going, and he acted like he would go further. <sup>29</sup> They urged him, saying, "Stay with us, for it is almost evening, and the day is almost over."

He went in to stay with them. <sup>30</sup> When he had sat down at the table with them, he took the bread and gave thanks. Breaking it, he gave it to them. <sup>31</sup> Their eyes were opened and they recognized him, then he vanished out of their sight. <sup>32</sup> They said to one another, "Weren't our hearts burning within us, while he spoke to us along the way, and while he opened the Scriptures to us?"

<sup>33</sup> They rose up that very hour, returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and those who were with them, <sup>34</sup> saying, "The Lord is risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon!" <sup>35</sup> They related the things that happened along the way, and how he was recognized by them in the breaking of the bread.

<sup>36</sup> As they said these things, Jesus himself stood among them, and said to them, "Peace be to you." <sup>37</sup> But they were terrified and filled with fear and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

<sup>38</sup> He said to them, "Why are you troubled? Why do doubts arise in your hearts?" <sup>39</sup> See my hands and my feet, that it is truly me. Touch me and see, for a spirit doesn't have flesh and bones, as you see that I have." <sup>40</sup> When he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet. <sup>41</sup> While they still didn't believe for joy, and wondered, he said to them, "Do you have anything here to eat?"

<sup>42</sup> They gave him a piece of a broiled fish and some honeycomb. <sup>43</sup> He took them, and ate in front of them.

<sup>44</sup> He said to them, "This is what I told you, while I was still with you, that all things which are written in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms, and prophecies concerning me must be fulfilled."

<sup>45</sup> Then he opened their minds, that they might understand the Scriptures. <sup>46</sup> He said to them, "Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day, <sup>47</sup> and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name to all the nations, beginning at Jerusalem. <sup>48</sup> You are witnesses of these things. <sup>49</sup> Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high."

<sup>50</sup> He led them out as far as Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. <sup>51</sup> While he blessed them, he withdrew from them, and was carried

*up into heaven. <sup>52</sup> They worshiped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy, <sup>53</sup> and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen. Luke 24:1-53.*

And so Jesus' disciples received a lesson in the prophecies of God concerning Jesus' birth, life, ministry, crucifixion, death and now his resurrection and ascension into heaven. Prophecies that were recorded in the scriptures between 400 and 1,400 years before the birth of Jesus. Prophecies that you can read and discover for yourself that would have been impossible to add to the scriptures following Jesus being raised from the dead. Prophecies that prove God does exist and that since the beginning of creation, the history of humankind has been unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

In the following two chapters, The Gospel of Luke, and Acts of The Apostles. These are two letters from Luke, who is writing to an important friend telling him about Jesus Christ. By reading these two chapters, you will discover why God sent His only Son, Jesus Christ to earth. You will see how the prophecies are fulfilled in Jesus and how other prophecies are fulfilled down through history and into the future. Reading these next two chapters will help give you a clear picture of what and why certain prophecies will be fulfilled in the future.



## 5. EVIDENCE FOR GOD

### Prophecies of God # 36-46.

There are four gospels in the Holy Bible, written by Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. Each gospel is an account of the life and ministry of Jesus Christ. The one I have chosen for you to read here is from the Gospel of Luke, because Luke presents his gospel as the gospel of evidence for God. 2,000 years ago, the people wanted evidence, proof that Jesus Christ is who he claimed to be, the anointed one of God, prophesied by God through Moses 1,400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ, in Deuteronomy 18:18. Do you want evidence for God, just like the Jews wanted evidence for God through Jesus Christ? Well, God moved heaven and earth to bring you the evidence, which you can read, examine and put to the test and discover it is true.

In this chapter, we read the complete Gospel of Luke from the Christian Holy Bible. Jesus Christ is 'God with us'. Here we read the very words spoken by God, eyewitness testimonies of disciples and followers of Jesus Christ. It is through the gospel (meaning good news) that we read the good news of God's plan for the eternal destiny of humankind.

One of the reasons some people find it difficult to believe in God or to believe in Jesus Christ, is the insistence of the Christian Church to claim that Jesus was born of the Virgin Mary. The Church would say that you just have to have faith, to believe in God and believe in a virgin birth (that Mary became pregnant without sexual relations with a man).

However, the evidence proves that Jesus Christ is God, and with his life, ministry, death and resurrection all being a life, ministry, death and resurrection of miracles, it is hardly surprising that his birth as Jesus Christ was also a miracle of God. Once we have an understanding of the evidence for God, and the prophecies of God. Then we have faith in God and the virgin birth based upon the rock-solid evidence for God. Luke makes a point of not just telling us that Jesus was born of the Virgin Mary but explains how this miraculous event is part of the predetermined plan and purpose of God, through the prophecies and promises of God.

In the first two chapters of Luke, he writes of the birth of John the Baptist and of Jesus Christ. God sends His angel Gabriel to make this announcement to the father of John (a priest named Zacharias), and to the Virgin Mary.

Interestingly, it is the same angel Gabriel who some six hundred years earlier, God sent to Daniel. Gabriel is sent to Daniel to give an understanding of a vision Daniel received and also to deliver two prophecies that speak of Jesus Christ.

You can read these in Daniel 8:15-18, Daniel 9:21-22, and Daniel 9:25-26. These two prophecies accurately tell of when the Messiah will come, and then He will be killed, not for Himself, but for others. Just like all prophecies of God, we know these (written in the Old Testament) could not have been written after the event.

The angel Gabriel tells Zacharias his son, who is to be called John, will come in the spirit of Elijah the prophet, to prepare the way for the Lord. This is in fulfilment of the prophecy given to Isaiah.

**(Prophecy # 36.)**

*The voice of one who calls out,*

*“Prepare the way of Yahweh in the wilderness!*

*Make a level highway in the desert for our God.*

*<sup>4</sup> Every valley shall be exalted,*

*and every mountain and hill shall be made low.*

*The uneven shall be made level,*

*and the rough places a plain.*

*<sup>5</sup> Yahweh’s glory shall be revealed,*

*and all flesh shall see it together;*

*for the mouth of Yahweh has spoken it.” Isaiah 40:3-5. (c. 700 B.C.)*

Also, the prophecy of God, was given to Malachi.

**(Prophecy # 37.)**

*<sup>5</sup> Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of Yahweh comes. Malachi 4:5 (c. 450 B.C.)*

The angel Gabriel tells Mary.

**(Prophecy # 38.)** You will have a son and name him Jesus.

**(Prophecy # 39.)** He will be called the Son of the Highest God.

**(Prophecy # 40.)** God will give him the throne of his ancestor King David (the throne over the Jews, Jerusalem, Israel).

**(Prophecy # 41.)** His kingdom will have no end.

These are the fulfilment of the following Old Testament scriptures written 700 years before the birth of Jesus Christ.

Isaiah 7:14. The name Immanuel means ‘God with us’. Isaiah 9:6-7.

When we consider the supernatural ability of God to foretell such important events, then it is not difficult or unreasonable for us to believe what the scriptures tell us that Jesus Christ was born of the Virgin Mary.

Here are a few more prophecies of God fulfilled in the Gospel of Luke.

**(Prophecy # 42.)**

*61 The Lord Yahweh's Spirit is on me,  
because Yahweh has anointed me to preach good news to the humble.  
He has sent me to bind up the broken hearted,  
to proclaim liberty to the captives  
and release to those who are bound.* Isaiah 61:1. (c. 700 BC).  
Fulfilled in Luke 4:18-19.

**(Prophecy # 43.)**

*The eyes of the blind will be opened.* Isaiah 35:5-6 (c. 700 BC).  
Fulfilled in Luke 7:22.

**(Prophecy # 44.)**

*Keep on Hearing and seeing but do not understand.* Isaiah 6:9-10. (c. 700 BC). Fulfilled in Luke 8:9-10.

**(Prophecy # 45.)**

*Thirty Pieces of Silver.* Zechariah 11:12-13 (c. 500 BC). Fulfilled in Luke 22:2-6.

**(Prophecy # 46.)**

*Another like Moses.* Deuteronomy 18:18. (c.1,400 BC). Fulfilled in Luke 24:27. *Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he*

*explained to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.*

Luke 24:27.

It is now some 1,400 years since God told Moses He would send another one to His people like Moses. During all that time, the Jews celebrated the Passover festival every year in Jerusalem and had been offering worship to God and making sacrifices to God as instructed. Sacrifices were made to God for the sins of individuals and for the nation. Everyone knew that to sin against God (to break the commandments or laws given by God), meant those who sinned must offer the correct sacrifice to God.

In AD 1, the Jews were under the control of the Roman Empire (whom the Jews hated). The people longed to be free of the Roman occupation of their land and looked to the prophecies of God that foretold of their freedom. They looked to the fulfilment of the prophecies, where God would send them a Messiah, one like Moses, or like King David who would defeat the Romans in battle.

For the Romans to keep the Jews under control, the Romans had a severe way of dealing with criminals. They would have them flogged and then crucified by nailing them to an upright cross of wood. Death would be slow and agonizing, their bodies hanging on the cross for days providing a deterrent to other lawbreakers.

In the Holy Bible, there are four gospels (the word gospel means good news), Matthew, Mark, Luke and John, each one writing about Jesus Christ from a different perspective. In this gospel, Luke is writing to his good friend Theophilus, so that he might know the certainty of what he had learned about Jesus Christ. A point worth keeping in mind as you read is that when Jesus speaks, it is the same as God speaking, for Jesus Christ is God.

**The Gospel of Luke.** World English Bible (WEB).

**1** Since many have undertaken to set in order a narrative concerning those matters which have been fulfilled among us, <sup>2</sup>even as those who from the beginning were eyewitnesses and servants of the word delivered them to us, <sup>3</sup>it seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately from the first, to write to you in order, most excellent Theophilus; <sup>4</sup>that you might know the certainty concerning the things in which you were instructed.

<sup>5</sup> There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the priestly division of Abijah. He had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. <sup>6</sup> They were both righteous before God, walking blamelessly in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord. <sup>7</sup> But they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and they both were well advanced in years.

<sup>8</sup> Now while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his division <sup>9</sup> according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the temple of the Lord and burn incense. <sup>10</sup> The whole multitude of the people were praying outside at the hour of incense.

<sup>11</sup> An angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. <sup>12</sup> Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon him. <sup>13</sup> But the angel said to him, "Don't be afraid, Zacharias, because your request has been heard. Your wife, Elizabeth, will bear you a son, and you shall call his name John. <sup>14</sup> You will have joy and gladness, and many will rejoice at his birth. <sup>15</sup> For he will be great in the sight of the Lord, and he will drink no wine nor strong drink. He will be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb. <sup>16</sup> He will turn many of the children of Israel to the Lord their God. <sup>17</sup> He will go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, 'to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to prepare a people prepared for the Lord.'"

<sup>18</sup> Zacharias said to the angel, "How can I be sure of this? For I am an old man, and my wife is well advanced in years."

<sup>19</sup> The angel answered him, "I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God. I was sent to speak to you and to bring you this good news. <sup>20</sup> Behold, you will be silent and not able to speak until the day that these things will happen, because you didn't believe my words, which will be fulfilled in their proper time."

<sup>21</sup> The people were waiting for Zacharias, and they marvelled that he delayed in the temple. <sup>22</sup> When he came out, he could not speak to them. They perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple. He continued making signs to them, and remained mute. <sup>23</sup> When the days of his service were fulfilled, he departed to his house. <sup>24</sup> After these days Elizabeth his wife conceived, and she hid herself five months, saying, <sup>25</sup> "Thus has the Lord done to me in the days in which he looked at me, to take away my reproach among men."

<sup>26</sup> Now in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, <sup>27</sup> to a virgin pledged to be married to a man whose name was Joseph, of David's house. The virgin's name was Mary. <sup>28</sup> Having come in, the angel said to her, "Rejoice, you highly favoured one! The Lord is with you. Blessed are you among women!"

<sup>29</sup> But when she saw him, she was greatly troubled at the saying, and considered what kind of salutation this might be. <sup>30</sup> The angel said to her, "Don't be afraid, Mary, for you have found favour with God. <sup>31</sup> Behold, you will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and shall name him 'Jesus.' <sup>32</sup> He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, <sup>33</sup> and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever. There will be no end to his Kingdom."

<sup>34</sup> Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, seeing I am a virgin?"

<sup>35</sup> The angel answered her, "The Holy Spirit will come on you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. Therefore also the holy one who is born from you will be called the Son of God. <sup>36</sup> Behold, Elizabeth your relative also has conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. <sup>37</sup> For nothing spoken by God is impossible."

<sup>38</sup> Mary said, "Behold, the servant of the Lord; let it be done to me according to your word."

Then the angel departed from her.

<sup>39</sup> Mary arose in those days and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah, <sup>40</sup> and entered into the house of Zacharias and greeted Elizabeth. <sup>41</sup> When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the baby leapt in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. <sup>42</sup> She called out with a loud voice and said, "Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the fruit of your womb! <sup>43</sup> Why am I so favoured, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? <sup>44</sup> For behold, when the voice of your greeting came into my ears, the baby leapt in my womb for joy! <sup>45</sup> Blessed is she who believed, for there will be a fulfilment of the things which have been spoken to her from the Lord!"

<sup>46</sup> Mary said,

“My soul magnifies the Lord.

<sup>47</sup> My spirit has rejoiced in God my Savior,

<sup>48</sup> for he has looked at the humble state of his servant.

For behold, from now on, all generations will call me blessed.

<sup>49</sup> For he who is mighty has done great things for me.

Holy is his name.

<sup>50</sup> His mercy is for generations and generations on those who fear him.

<sup>51</sup> He has shown strength with his arm.

He has scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

<sup>52</sup> He has put down princes from their thrones,

and has exalted the lowly.

<sup>53</sup> He has filled the hungry with good things.

He has sent the rich away empty.

<sup>54</sup> He has given help to Israel, his servant, that he might remember mercy,

<sup>55</sup> as he spoke to our fathers,

to Abraham and his offspring forever.”

<sup>56</sup> Mary stayed with her about three months, and then returned to her house.

<sup>57</sup> Now the time that Elizabeth should give birth was fulfilled, and she gave birth to a son. <sup>58</sup> Her neighbours and her relatives heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy toward her, and they rejoiced with her. <sup>59</sup> On the eighth day, they came to circumcise the child; and they would have called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. <sup>60</sup> His mother answered, “Not so; but he will be called John.”

<sup>61</sup> They said to her, “There is no one among your relatives who is called by this name.” <sup>62</sup> They made signs to his father, what he would have him called.

<sup>63</sup> He asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, “His name is John.”

They all marvelled. <sup>64</sup> His mouth was opened immediately and his tongue freed, and he spoke, blessing God. <sup>65</sup> Fear came on all who lived around them, and all these sayings were talked about throughout all the hill country of Judea. <sup>66</sup> All who heard them laid them up in their heart, saying, “What then will this child be?” The hand of the Lord was with him.

<sup>67</sup> His father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying,

<sup>68</sup> “Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel,  
for he has visited and redeemed his people;  
<sup>69</sup> and has raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant  
David  
<sup>70</sup> (as he spoke by the mouth of his holy prophets who have been from  
of old),  
<sup>71</sup> salvation from our enemies and from the hand of all who hate us;  
<sup>72</sup> to show mercy toward our fathers,  
to remember his holy covenant,  
<sup>73</sup> the oath which he swore to Abraham our father,  
<sup>74</sup> to grant to us that we, being delivered out of the hand of our  
enemies,  
should serve him without fear,  
<sup>75</sup> in holiness and righteousness before him all the days of our life.  
<sup>76</sup> And you, child, will be called a prophet of the Most High;  
for you will go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways,  
<sup>77</sup> to give knowledge of salvation to his people by the remission of  
their sins,  
<sup>78</sup> because of the tender mercy of our God,  
by which the dawn from on high will visit us,  
<sup>79</sup> to shine on those who sit in darkness and the shadow of death;  
to guide our feet into the way of peace.”

<sup>80</sup> The child was growing and becoming strong in spirit, and was in the desert until the day of his public appearance to Israel.

2 Now in those days, a decree went out from Caesar Augustus that all the world should be enrolled. <sup>2</sup> This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was governor of Syria. <sup>3</sup> All went to enrol themselves, everyone to his own city. <sup>4</sup> Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to David’s city, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and family of David; <sup>5</sup> to enrol himself with Mary, who was pledged to be married to him as wife, being pregnant.

<sup>6</sup> While they were there, the day had come for her to give birth. <sup>7</sup> She gave birth to her firstborn son. She wrapped him in bands of cloth, and laid him in a feeding trough, because there was no room for them in the inn. <sup>8</sup> There were shepherds in the same country staying in the field, and keeping watch by night over their flock. <sup>9</sup> Behold, an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were terrified. <sup>10</sup> The angel said to them, “Don’t be afraid, for behold, I bring you good news of great joy which will be to all the people. <sup>11</sup> For there is



born to you today, in David's city, a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. <sup>12</sup> This is the sign to you: you will find a baby wrapped in strips of cloth, lying in a feeding trough." <sup>13</sup> Suddenly, there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly army praising God, and saying,

<sup>14</sup> "Glory to God in the highest,  
on earth peace, goodwill toward men."

<sup>15</sup> When the angels went away from them into the sky, the shepherds said to one another, "Let's go to Bethlehem, now, and see this thing that has happened, which the Lord has made known to us." <sup>16</sup> They came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the baby was lying in the feeding trough. <sup>17</sup> When they saw it, they publicized widely the saying which was spoken to them about this child. <sup>18</sup> All who heard it wondered at the things which were spoken to them by the shepherds. <sup>19</sup> But Mary kept all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. <sup>20</sup> The shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, just as it was told them.

<sup>21</sup> When eight days were fulfilled for the circumcision of the child, his name was called Jesus, which was given by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

<sup>22</sup> When the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord <sup>23</sup> (as it is written in the law of the Lord, "Every male who opens the womb shall be called holy to the Lord"), <sup>24</sup> and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, "A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons."

<sup>25</sup> Behold, there was a man in Jerusalem whose name was Simeon. This man was righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel, and the Holy Spirit was on him. <sup>26</sup> It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord's Christ. <sup>27</sup> He came in the Spirit into the temple. When the parents brought in the child, Jesus, that they might do concerning him according to the custom of the law, <sup>28</sup> then he received him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,

<sup>29</sup> "Now you are releasing your servant, Master,  
according to your word, in peace;

<sup>30</sup> for my eyes have seen your salvation,  
<sup>31</sup> which you have prepared before the face of all peoples;  
<sup>32</sup> a light for revelation to the nations,  
and the glory of your people Israel.”

<sup>33</sup> Joseph and his mother were marvelling at the things which were spoken concerning him, <sup>34</sup> and Simeon blessed them, and said to Mary, his mother, “Behold, this child is set for the falling and the rising of many in Israel, and for a sign which is spoken against. <sup>35</sup> Yes, a sword will pierce through your own soul, that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.”

<sup>36</sup> There was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was of a great age, having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity, <sup>37</sup> and she had been a widow for about eighty-four years), who didn’t depart from the temple, worshiping with fastings and petitions night and day. <sup>38</sup> Coming up at that very hour, she gave thanks to the Lord, and spoke of him to all those who were looking for redemption in Jerusalem.

<sup>39</sup> When they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city, Nazareth. <sup>40</sup> The child was growing, and was becoming strong in spirit, being filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him. <sup>41</sup> His parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the Passover.

<sup>42</sup> When he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem according to the custom of the feast, <sup>43</sup> and when they had fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem. Joseph and his mother didn’t know it, <sup>44</sup> but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day’s journey, and they looked for him among their relatives and acquaintances. <sup>45</sup> When they didn’t find him, they returned to Jerusalem, looking for him. <sup>46</sup> After three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the middle of the teachers, both listening to them, and asking them questions. <sup>47</sup> All who heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. <sup>48</sup> When they saw him, they were astonished, and his mother said to him, “Son, why have you treated us this way? Behold, your father and I were anxiously looking for you.”

<sup>49</sup> He said to them, “Why were you looking for me? Didn’t you know that I must be in my Father’s house?” <sup>50</sup> They didn’t understand the saying which he spoke to them. <sup>51</sup> And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth. He was subject to them, and his mother kept all these sayings in

her heart. <sup>52</sup> And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men.

**3** Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene, <sup>2</sup> in the high priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came to John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness. <sup>3</sup> He came into all the region around the Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for remission of sins. <sup>4</sup> As it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet,

“The voice of one crying in the wilderness,

‘Make ready the way of the Lord.

Make his paths straight.

<sup>5</sup> Every valley will be filled.

Every mountain and hill will be brought low.

The crooked will become straight,

and the rough ways smooth.

<sup>6</sup> All flesh will see God’s salvation.”

<sup>7</sup> He said therefore to the multitudes who went out to be baptized by him, “You offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup> Therefore produce fruits worthy of repentance, and don’t begin to say among yourselves, ‘We have Abraham for our father;’ for I tell you that God is able to raise up children to Abraham from these stones! <sup>9</sup> Even now the axe also lies at the root of the trees. Every tree therefore that doesn’t produce good fruit is cut down, and thrown into the fire.”

<sup>10</sup> The multitudes asked him, “What then must we do?”

<sup>11</sup> He answered them, “He who has two coats, let him give to him who has none. He who has food, let him do likewise.”

<sup>12</sup> Tax collectors also came to be baptized, and they said to him, “Teacher, what must we do?”

<sup>13</sup> He said to them, “Collect no more than that which is appointed to you.”

<sup>14</sup> Soldiers also asked him, saying, “What about us? What must we do?”

He said to them, “Extort from no one by violence, neither accuse anyone wrongfully. Be content with your wages.”

<sup>15</sup> As the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned in their hearts concerning John, whether perhaps he was the Christ, <sup>16</sup> John answered them all, “I indeed baptize you with water, but he comes who is mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to loosen. He will baptize you in the Holy Spirit and fire, <sup>17</sup> whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor, and will gather the wheat into his barn; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”

<sup>18</sup> Then with many other exhortations he preached good news to the people, <sup>19</sup> but Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias, his brother’s wife, and for all the evil things which Herod had done, <sup>20</sup> added this also to them all, that he shut up John in prison. <sup>21</sup> Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus also had been baptized, and was praying. The sky was opened, <sup>22</sup> and the Holy Spirit descended in a bodily form like a dove on him; and a voice came out of the sky, saying “You are my beloved Son. In you I am well pleased.”

<sup>23</sup> Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years old, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the son of Heli, <sup>24</sup> the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, <sup>25</sup> the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, <sup>26</sup> the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Joseph, the son of Judah, <sup>27</sup> the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, <sup>28</sup> the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmodam, the son of Er, <sup>29</sup> the son of Jose, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, <sup>30</sup> the son of Simeon, the son of Judah, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonan, the son of Eliakim, <sup>31</sup> the son of Melea, the son of Menan, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, <sup>32</sup> the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Salmon, the son of Nahshon, <sup>33</sup> the son of Amminadab, the son of Aram, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah, <sup>34</sup> the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor, <sup>35</sup> the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah, <sup>36</sup> the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, <sup>37</sup> the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, <sup>38</sup> the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.

<sup>4</sup> Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness <sup>2</sup> for forty days, being tempted by the devil. He ate nothing in those days. Afterward, when they were completed, he was hungry. <sup>3</sup> The devil said to him, “If you are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread.”

<sup>4</sup> Jesus answered him, saying, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.’”

<sup>5</sup> The devil, leading him up on a high mountain, showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. <sup>6</sup> The devil said to him, “I will give you all this authority, and their glory, for it has been delivered to me; and I give it to whomever I want. <sup>7</sup> If you therefore will worship before me, it will all be yours.”

<sup>8</sup> Jesus answered him, “Get behind me Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the Lord your God, and you shall serve him only.’”

<sup>9</sup> He led him to Jerusalem, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to him, “If you are the Son of God, cast yourself down from here, <sup>10</sup> for it is written,

‘He will put his angels in charge of you, to guard you;’

<sup>11</sup> and, ‘On their hands they will bear you up, lest perhaps you dash your foot against a stone.’”

<sup>12</sup> Jesus answering, said to him, “It has been said, ‘You shall not tempt the Lord your God.’”

<sup>13</sup> When the devil had completed every temptation, he departed from him until another time.

<sup>14</sup> Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and news about him spread through all the surrounding area. <sup>15</sup> He taught in their synagogues, being glorified by all.

<sup>16</sup> He came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up. He entered, as was his custom, into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to read. <sup>17</sup> The book of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. He opened the book, and found the place where it was written,

<sup>18</sup> “The Spirit of the Lord is on me,  
because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor.  
He has sent me to heal the broken hearted,  
to proclaim release to the captives,  
recovering of sight to the blind,  
to deliver those who are crushed,  
<sup>19</sup> and to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.”

<sup>20</sup> He closed the book, gave it back to the attendant, and sat down. The eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. <sup>21</sup> He began to tell them, “Today, this Scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing.”

<sup>22</sup> All testified about him, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth, and they said, “Isn’t this Joseph’s son?”

<sup>23</sup> He said to them, “Doubtless you will tell me this parable, ‘Physician, heal yourself! Whatever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in your hometown.’” <sup>24</sup> He said, “Most certainly I tell you, no prophet is acceptable in his hometown. <sup>25</sup> But truly I tell you, there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the sky was shut up three years and six months, when a great famine came over all the land. <sup>26</sup> Elijah was sent to none of them, except to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, to a woman who was a widow. <sup>27</sup> There were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet, yet not one of them was cleansed, except Naaman, the Syrian.”

<sup>28</sup> They were all filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things. <sup>29</sup> They rose up, threw him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill that their city was built on, that they might throw him off the cliff. <sup>30</sup> But he, passing through the middle of them, went his way.

<sup>31</sup> He came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee. He was teaching them on the Sabbath day, <sup>32</sup> and they were astonished at his teaching, for his word was with authority. <sup>33</sup> In the synagogue there was a man who had a spirit of an unclean demon, and he cried out with a loud voice, <sup>34</sup> saying, “Ah! what have we to do with you, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are: the Holy One of God!”

<sup>35</sup> Jesus rebuked him, saying, “Be silent, and come out of him!” When the demon had thrown him down in the middle of them, he came out of him, having done him no harm.

<sup>36</sup> Amazement came on all, and they spoke together, one with another, saying, “What is this word? For with authority and power he commands the unclean spirits, and they come out!” <sup>37</sup> News about him went out into every place of the surrounding region.

<sup>38</sup> He rose up from the synagogue, and entered into Simon’s house. Simon’s mother-in-law was afflicted with a great fever, and they begged him for her. <sup>39</sup> He stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her. Immediately she rose up and served them. <sup>40</sup> When the sun was setting, all those who had any sick with various diseases brought them to him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. <sup>41</sup> Demons also came out of many, crying out, and saying, “You are the Christ, the Son of God!” Rebuking them, he didn’t allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

<sup>42</sup> When it was day, he departed and went into an uninhabited place, and the multitudes looked for him, and came to him, and held on to him, so that he wouldn’t go away from them. <sup>43</sup> But he said to them, **“I must preach the good news of God’s Kingdom to the other cities also. For this reason I have been sent.”** <sup>44</sup> He was preaching in the synagogues of Galilee.

**5** Now while the multitude pressed on him and heard the word of God, he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret. <sup>2</sup> He saw two boats standing by the lake, but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets. <sup>3</sup> He entered into one of the boats, which was Simon’s, and asked him to put out a little from the land. He sat down and taught the multitudes from the boat. <sup>4</sup> When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon, **“Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a catch.”**

<sup>5</sup> Simon answered him, “Master, we worked all night, and took nothing; but at your word I will let down the net.” <sup>6</sup> When they had done this, they caught a great multitude of fish, and their net was breaking. <sup>7</sup> They beckoned to their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. They came, and filled both boats, so that they began to sink. <sup>8</sup> But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus’ knees, saying, “Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, Lord.” <sup>9</sup> For he was amazed, and all who were with him, at the catch of fish which they had caught; <sup>10</sup> and so also were James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon.

Jesus said to Simon, **“Don’t be afraid. From now on you will be catching people alive.”**

<sup>11</sup> When they had brought their boats to land, they left everything, and followed him. <sup>12</sup> While he was in one of the cities, behold, there was a man full of leprosy. When he saw Jesus, he fell on his face, and begged him, saying, "Lord, if you want to, you can make me clean."

<sup>13</sup> He stretched out his hand, and touched him, saying, "**I want to. Be made clean.**"

Immediately the leprosy left him. <sup>14</sup> He commanded him to tell no one, "**But go your way, and show yourself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing according to what Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.**" <sup>15</sup> But the report concerning him spread much more, and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities. <sup>16</sup> But he withdrew himself into the desert, and prayed.

<sup>17</sup> On one of those days, he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and teachers of the law sitting by, who had come out of every village of Galilee, Judea, and Jerusalem. The power of the Lord was with him to heal them. <sup>18</sup> Behold, men brought a paralyzed man on a cot, and they sought to bring him in to lay before Jesus. <sup>19</sup> Not finding a way to bring him in because of the multitude, they went up to the housetop, and let him down through the tiles with his cot into the middle before Jesus. <sup>20</sup> Seeing their faith, he said to him, "**Man, your sins are forgiven you.**"

<sup>21</sup> The scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, "Who is this who speaks blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?"

<sup>22</sup> But Jesus, perceiving their thoughts, answered them, "**Why are you reasoning so in your hearts? <sup>23</sup> Which is easier to say, 'Your sins are forgiven you;' or to say, 'Arise and walk?' <sup>24</sup> But that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins**" (he said to the paralyzed man), "**I tell you, arise, take up your cot, and go to your house.**"

<sup>25</sup> Immediately he rose up before them, and took up that which he was laying on, and departed to his house, glorifying God. <sup>26</sup> Amazement took hold on all, and they glorified God. They were filled with fear, saying, "We have seen strange things today."

<sup>27</sup> After these things he went out, and saw a tax collector named Levi sitting at the tax office, and said to him, "Follow me!"



<sup>28</sup> He left everything, and rose up and followed him. <sup>29</sup> Levi made a great feast for him in his house. There was a great crowd of tax collectors and others who were reclining with them. <sup>30</sup> Their scribes and the Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, “Why do you eat and drink with the tax collectors and sinners?” <sup>31</sup> Jesus answered them, “Those who are healthy have no need for a physician, but those who are sick do. <sup>32</sup> I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.”

<sup>33</sup> They said to him, “Why do John’s disciples often fast and pray, likewise also the disciples of the Pharisees, but yours eat and drink?”

<sup>34</sup> He said to them, “Can you make the friends of the bridegroom fast while the bridegroom is with them? <sup>35</sup> But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them. Then they will fast in those days.” <sup>36</sup> He also told a parable to them. “No one puts a piece from a new garment on an old garment, or else he will tear the new, and also the piece from the new will not match the old. <sup>37</sup> No one puts new wine into old wine skins, or else the new wine will burst the skins, and it will be spilled, and the skins will be destroyed. <sup>38</sup> But new wine must be put into fresh wine skins, and both are preserved. <sup>39</sup> No man having drunk old wine immediately desires new, for he says, ‘The old is better.’”

<sup>6</sup> Now on the second Sabbath after the first, he was going through the grain fields. His disciples plucked the heads of grain and ate, rubbing them in their hands. <sup>2</sup> But some of the Pharisees said to them, “Why do you do that which is not lawful to do on the Sabbath day?”

<sup>3</sup> Jesus, answering them, said, “Haven’t you read what David did when he was hungry, he, and those who were with him; <sup>4</sup> how he entered into God’s house, and took and ate the showbread, and gave also to those who were with him, which is not lawful to eat except for the priests alone?” <sup>5</sup> He said to them, “The Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath.”

<sup>6</sup> It also happened on another Sabbath that he entered into the synagogue and taught. There was a man there, and his right hand was withered. <sup>7</sup> The scribes and the Pharisees watched him, to see whether he would heal on the Sabbath, that they might find an accusation against him. <sup>8</sup> But he knew their thoughts; and he said to the man who had the withered hand, “Rise up, and stand in the middle.” He arose and stood. <sup>9</sup> Then Jesus said to them, “I will ask you something: Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good, or to do harm? To save a life, or to kill?” <sup>10</sup> He looked around at them all, and said to the man, “Stretch out your hand.” He did, and his hand was restored

as sound as the other. <sup>11</sup> But they were filled with rage, and talked with one another about what they might do to Jesus.

<sup>12</sup> In these days, he went out to the mountain to pray, and he continued all night in prayer to God. <sup>13</sup> When it was day, he called his disciples, and from them he chose twelve, whom he also named apostles: <sup>14</sup> Simon, whom he also named Peter; Andrew, his brother; James; John; Philip; Bartholomew; <sup>15</sup> Matthew; Thomas; James, the son of Alphaeus; Simon, who was called the Zealot; <sup>16</sup> Judas the son of James; and Judas Iscariot, who also became a traitor. <sup>17</sup> He came down with them, and stood on a level place, with a crowd of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, who came to hear him and to be healed of their diseases; <sup>18</sup> as well as those who were troubled by unclean spirits, and they were being healed. <sup>19</sup> All the multitude sought to touch him, for power came out of him and healed them all.

<sup>20</sup> He lifted up his eyes to his disciples, and said,

“Blessed are you who are poor,  
God’s Kingdom is yours.

<sup>21</sup> Blessed are you who hunger now,  
for you will be filled.

Blessed are you who weep now,  
for you will laugh.

<sup>22</sup> Blessed are you when men hate you, and when they exclude and mock you, and throw out your name as evil, for the Son of Man’s sake.

<sup>23</sup> Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy, for behold, your reward is great in heaven, for their fathers did the same thing to the prophets.

<sup>24</sup> “But woe to you who are rich!  
For you have received your consolation.

<sup>25</sup> Woe to you, you who are full now,  
for you will be hungry.

Woe to you who laugh now,  
for you will mourn and weep.

<sup>26</sup> Woe, when men speak well of you,  
for their fathers did the same thing to the false prophets.

<sup>27</sup> “But I tell you who hear: love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, <sup>28</sup> bless those who curse you, and pray for those who mistreat you. <sup>29</sup> To him who strikes you on the cheek, offer also the other; and from

him who takes away your cloak, don't withhold your coat also. <sup>30</sup> Give to everyone who asks you, and don't ask him who takes away your goods to give them back again.

<sup>31</sup> "As you would like people to do to you, do exactly so to them. <sup>32</sup> If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners love those who love them. <sup>33</sup> If you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners do the same. <sup>34</sup> If you lend to those from whom you hope to receive, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners, to receive back as much. <sup>35</sup> But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing back; and your reward will be great, and you will be children of the Most High; for he is kind toward the unthankful and evil.

<sup>36</sup> "Therefore be merciful,  
even as your Father is also merciful.  
<sup>37</sup> Don't judge,  
and you won't be judged.  
Don't condemn,  
and you won't be condemned.  
Set free,  
and you will be set free.

<sup>38</sup> "Give, and it will be given to you: good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over, will be given to you. For with the same measure you measure it will be measured back to you."

<sup>39</sup> He spoke a parable to them. "Can the blind guide the blind? Won't they both fall into a pit? <sup>40</sup> A disciple is not above his teacher, but everyone when he is fully trained will be like his teacher. <sup>41</sup> Why do you see the speck of chaff that is in your brother's eye, but don't consider the beam that is in your own eye? <sup>42</sup> Or how can you tell your brother, 'Brother, let me remove the speck of chaff that is in your eye,' when you yourself don't see the beam that is in your own eye? You hypocrite! First remove the beam from your own eye, and then you can see clearly to remove the speck of chaff that is in your brother's eye. <sup>43</sup> For there is no good tree that produces rotten fruit; nor again a rotten tree that produces good fruit. <sup>44</sup> For each tree is known by its own fruit. For people don't gather figs from thorns, nor do they gather grapes from a bramble bush. <sup>45</sup> The good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings out that which is good, and the evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart brings out that which is evil, for out of the abundance of the heart, his mouth speaks.

<sup>46</sup> “Why do you call me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ and don’t do the things which I say? <sup>47</sup> Everyone who comes to me, and hears my words, and does them, I will show you who he is like. <sup>48</sup> He is like a man building a house, who dug and went deep, and laid a foundation on the rock. When a flood arose, the stream broke against that house, and could not shake it, because it was founded on the rock. <sup>49</sup> But he who hears, and doesn’t do, is like a man who built a house on the earth without a foundation, against which the stream broke, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.”

<sup>7</sup> After he had finished speaking in the hearing of the people, he entered into Capernaum. <sup>2</sup> A certain centurion’s servant, who was dear to him, was sick and at the point of death. <sup>3</sup> When he heard about Jesus, he sent to him elders of the Jews, asking him to come and save his servant. <sup>4</sup> When they came to Jesus, they begged him earnestly, saying, “He is worthy for you to do this for him, <sup>5</sup> for he loves our nation, and he built our synagogue for us.” <sup>6</sup> Jesus went with them. When he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying to him, “Lord, don’t trouble yourself, for I am not worthy for you to come under my roof. <sup>7</sup> Therefore I didn’t even think myself worthy to come to you; but say the word, and my servant will be healed. <sup>8</sup> For I also am a man placed under authority, having under myself soldiers. I tell this one, ‘Go!’ and he goes; and to another, ‘Come!’ and he comes; and to my servant, ‘Do this,’ and he does it.”

<sup>9</sup> When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned and said to the multitude who followed him, “**I tell you, I have not found such great faith, no, not in Israel.**” <sup>10</sup> Those who were sent, returning to the house, found that the servant who had been sick was well.

<sup>11</sup> Soon afterwards, he went to a city called Nain. Many of his disciples, along with a great multitude, went with him. <sup>12</sup> Now when he came near to the gate of the city, behold, one who was dead was carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow. Many people of the city were with her. <sup>13</sup> When the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said to her, “**Don’t cry.**” <sup>14</sup> He came near and touched the coffin, and the bearers stood still. He said, “**Young man, I tell you, arise!**” <sup>15</sup> He who was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother.

<sup>16</sup> Fear took hold of all, and they glorified God, saying, “A great prophet has arisen among us!” and, “God has visited his people!” <sup>17</sup> This report went out concerning him in the whole of Judea, and in all the surrounding region.

<sup>18</sup> The disciples of John told him about all these things. <sup>19</sup> John, calling to himself two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, “Are you the one who is coming, or should we look for another?” <sup>20</sup> When the men had come to him, they said, “John the Baptizer has sent us to you, saying, ‘Are you he who comes, or should we look for another?’”

<sup>21</sup> In that hour he cured many of diseases and plagues and evil spirits; and to many who were blind he gave sight. <sup>22</sup> Jesus answered them, “Go and tell John the things which you have seen and heard: that the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have good news preached to them. <sup>23</sup> Blessed is he who finds no occasion for stumbling in me.”

<sup>24</sup> When John’s messengers had departed, he began to tell the multitudes about John, “What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? <sup>25</sup> But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft clothing? Behold, those who are gorgeously dressed, and live delicately, are in kings’ courts. <sup>26</sup> But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and much more than a prophet. <sup>27</sup> This is he of whom it is written,

‘Behold, I send my messenger before your face,  
who will prepare your way before you.’

<sup>28</sup> “For I tell you, among those who are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptizer, yet he who is least in God’s Kingdom is greater than he.”

<sup>29</sup> When all the people and the tax collectors heard this, they declared God to be just, having been baptized with John’s baptism. <sup>30</sup> But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected the counsel of God, not being baptized by him themselves.

<sup>31</sup> “To what then should I compare the people of this generation? What are they like? <sup>32</sup> They are like children who sit in the marketplace, and call to one another, saying, ‘We piped to you, and you didn’t dance. We mourned, and you didn’t weep.’ <sup>33</sup> For John the Baptizer came neither eating bread nor drinking wine, and you say, ‘He has a demon.’ <sup>34</sup> The Son of Man has come eating and drinking, and you say, ‘Behold, a gluttonous man, and a drunkard; a friend of tax collectors and sinners!’ <sup>35</sup> Wisdom is justified by all her children.”

<sup>36</sup> One of the Pharisees invited him to eat with him. He entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat at the table. <sup>37</sup> Behold, a woman in the city who was a sinner, when she knew that he was reclining in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster jar of ointment. <sup>38</sup> Standing behind at his feet weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and she wiped them with the hair of her head, kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. <sup>39</sup> Now when the Pharisee who had invited him saw it, he said to himself, "This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what kind of woman this is who touches him, that she is a sinner."

<sup>40</sup> Jesus answered him, "Simon, I have something to tell you."

He said, "Teacher, say on."

<sup>41</sup> "A certain lender had two debtors. The one owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. <sup>42</sup> When they couldn't pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love him most?"

<sup>43</sup> Simon answered, "He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most."

He said to him, "You have judged correctly." <sup>44</sup> Turning to the woman, he said to Simon, "Do you see this woman? I entered into your house, and you gave me no water for my feet, but she has wet my feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head. <sup>45</sup> You gave me no kiss, but she, since the time I came in, has not ceased to kiss my feet. <sup>46</sup> You didn't anoint my head with oil, but she has anointed my feet with ointment. <sup>47</sup> Therefore I tell you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much. But one to whom little is forgiven, loves little." <sup>48</sup> He said to her, "Your sins are forgiven."

<sup>49</sup> Those who sat at the table with him began to say to themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?"

<sup>50</sup> He said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

**8** Soon afterwards, he went about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing the good news of God's Kingdom. With him were the twelve, <sup>2</sup> and certain women who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary who was called Magdalene, from whom seven demons had gone out; <sup>3</sup> and Joanna, the wife of Chuzas, Herod's steward; Susanna; and many others; who served them from their possessions. <sup>4</sup> When a great

multitude came together, and people from every city were coming to him, he spoke by a parable. <sup>5</sup>“The farmer went out to sow his seed. As he sowed, some fell along the road, and it was trampled under foot, and the birds of the sky devoured it. <sup>6</sup>Other seed fell on the rock, and as soon as it grew, it withered away, because it had no moisture. <sup>7</sup>Other fell amid the thorns, and the thorns grew with it, and choked it. <sup>8</sup>Other fell into the good ground, and grew, and produced one hundred times as much fruit.” As he said these things, he called out, “He who has ears to hear, let him hear!”

<sup>9</sup> Then his disciples asked him, “What does this parable mean?”

<sup>10</sup> He said, “To you it is given to know the mysteries of God’s Kingdom, but to the rest in parables; that ‘seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.’” <sup>11</sup> Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. <sup>12</sup> Those along the road are those who hear, then the devil comes, and takes away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved. <sup>13</sup> Those on the rock are they who, when they hear, receive the word with joy; but these have no root, who believe for a while, then fall away in time of temptation. <sup>14</sup> That which fell among the thorns, these are those who have heard, and as they go on their way they are choked with cares, riches, and pleasures of life, and bring no fruit to maturity. <sup>15</sup> Those in the good ground, these are those who with an honest and good heart, having heard the word, hold it tightly, and produce fruit with perseverance.

<sup>16</sup> “No one, when he has lit a lamp, covers it with a container, or puts it under a bed; but puts it on a stand, that those who enter in may see the light. <sup>17</sup> For nothing is hidden that will not be revealed; nor anything secret that will not be known and come to light. <sup>18</sup> Be careful therefore how you hear. For whoever has, to him will be given; and whoever doesn’t have, from him will be taken away even that which he thinks he has.”

<sup>19</sup> His mother and brothers came to him, and they could not come near him for the crowd. <sup>20</sup> Some people told him, “Your mother and your brothers stand outside, desiring to see you.”

<sup>21</sup> But he answered them, “My mother and my brothers are these who hear the word of God, and do it.”

<sup>22</sup> Now on one of those days, he entered into a boat, himself and his disciples, and he said to them, “Let’s go over to the other side of the lake.” So they launched out. <sup>23</sup> But as they sailed, he fell asleep. A

windstorm came down on the lake, and they were taking on dangerous amounts of water. <sup>24</sup> They came to him, and awoke him, saying, “Master, master, we are dying!” He awoke, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water, and they ceased, and it was calm. <sup>25</sup> He said to them, **“Where is your faith?”** Being afraid they marvelled, saying to one another, “Who is this then, that he commands even the winds and the water, and they obey him?”

<sup>26</sup> Then they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is opposite Galilee. <sup>27</sup> When Jesus stepped ashore, a certain man out of the city who had demons for a long time met him. He wore no clothes, and didn’t live in a house, but in the tombs. <sup>28</sup> When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, “What do I have to do with you, Jesus, you Son of the Most High God? I beg you, don’t torment me!” <sup>29</sup> For Jesus was commanding the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For the unclean spirit had often seized the man. He was kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters. Breaking the bonds apart, he was driven by the demon into the desert.

<sup>30</sup> Jesus asked him, **“What is your name?”**

He said, “Legion,” for many demons had entered into him. <sup>31</sup> They begged him that he would not command them to go into the abyss. <sup>32</sup> Now there was there a herd of many pigs feeding on the mountain, and they begged him that he would allow them to enter into those. Then he allowed them. <sup>33</sup> The demons came out of the man, and entered into the pigs, and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the lake, and were drowned. <sup>34</sup> When those who fed them saw what had happened, they fled and told it in the city and in the country.

<sup>35</sup> People went out to see what had happened. They came to Jesus and found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting at Jesus’ feet, clothed and in his right mind; and they were afraid. <sup>36</sup> Those who saw it told them how he who had been possessed by demons was healed. <sup>37</sup> All the people of the surrounding country of the Gadarenes asked him to depart from them, for they were very much afraid. Then he entered into the boat and returned. <sup>38</sup> But the man from whom the demons had gone out begged him that he might go with him, but Jesus sent him away, saying, <sup>39</sup> **“Return to your house, and declare what great things God has done for you.”** He went his way, proclaiming throughout the whole city what great things Jesus had done for him.



<sup>40</sup> When Jesus returned, the multitude welcomed him, for they were all waiting for him. <sup>41</sup> Behold, a man named Jairus came. He was a ruler of the synagogue. He fell down at Jesus' feet, and begged him to come into his house, <sup>42</sup> for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she was dying. But as he went, the multitudes pressed against him. <sup>43</sup> A woman who had a flow of blood for twelve years, who had spent all her living on physicians and could not be healed by any <sup>44</sup> came behind him, and touched the fringe of his cloak. Immediately the flow of her blood stopped. <sup>45</sup> Jesus said, **"Who touched me?"**

When all denied it, Peter and those with him said, "Master, the multitudes press and jostle you, and you say, **'Who touched me?'**"

<sup>46</sup> But Jesus said, **"Someone did touch me, for I perceived that power has gone out of me."** <sup>47</sup> When the woman saw that she was not hidden, she came trembling, and falling down before him declared to him in the presence of all the people the reason why she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately. <sup>48</sup> He said to her, **"Daughter, cheer up. Your faith has made you well. Go in peace."**

<sup>49</sup> While he still spoke, one from the ruler of the synagogue's house came, saying to him, "Your daughter is dead. Don't trouble the Teacher."

<sup>50</sup> But Jesus hearing it, answered him, **"Don't be afraid. Only believe, and she will be healed."**

<sup>51</sup> When he came to the house, he didn't allow anyone to enter in, except Peter, John, James, the father of the child, and her mother. <sup>52</sup> All were weeping and mourning her, but he said, **"Don't weep. She isn't dead, but sleeping."**

<sup>53</sup> They were ridiculing him, knowing that she was dead. <sup>54</sup> But he put them all outside, and taking her by the hand, he called, saying, **"Child, arise!"** <sup>55</sup> Her spirit returned, and she rose up immediately. He commanded that something be given to her to eat. <sup>56</sup> Her parents were amazed, but he commanded them to tell no one what had been done.

**9** He called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases. <sup>2</sup> He sent them out to preach God's Kingdom and to heal the sick. <sup>3</sup> He said to them, **"Take nothing for your journey—no staffs, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money. Don't have two coats**

each.<sup>4</sup> Into whatever house you enter, stay there, and depart from there.<sup>5</sup> As many as don't receive you, when you depart from that city, shake off even the dust from your feet for a testimony against them."

<sup>6</sup> They departed and went throughout the villages, preaching the Good News and healing everywhere. <sup>7</sup> Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him; and he was very perplexed, because it was said by some that John had risen from the dead,<sup>8</sup> and by some that Elijah had appeared, and by others that one of the old prophets had risen again. <sup>9</sup> Herod said, "I beheaded John, but who is this about whom I hear such things?" He sought to see him. <sup>10</sup> The apostles, when they had returned, told him what things they had done.

He took them and withdrew apart to a desert region of<sup>[b]</sup> a city called Bethsaida.<sup>11</sup> But the multitudes, perceiving it, followed him. He welcomed them, spoke to them of God's Kingdom, and he cured those who needed healing. <sup>12</sup> The day began to wear away; and the twelve came and said to him, "Send the multitude away, that they may go into the surrounding villages and farms, and lodge, and get food, for we are here in a deserted place."

<sup>13</sup> But he said to them, "You give them something to eat."

They said, "We have no more than five loaves and two fish, unless we should go and buy food for all these people." <sup>14</sup> For they were about five thousand men.

He said to his disciples, "Make them sit down in groups of about fifty each."<sup>15</sup> They did so, and made them all sit down. <sup>16</sup> He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up to the sky, he blessed them, broke them, and gave them to the disciples to set before the multitude. <sup>17</sup> They ate and were all filled. They gathered up twelve baskets of broken pieces that were left over.

<sup>18</sup> As he was praying alone, the disciples were with him, and he asked them, "Who do the multitudes say that I am?"

<sup>19</sup> They answered, "'John the Baptizer,' but others say, 'Elijah,' and others, that one of the old prophets has risen again."

<sup>20</sup> He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?"

Peter answered, “The Christ of God.”

<sup>21</sup> But he warned them, and commanded them to tell this to no one, <sup>22</sup> saying, “The Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.”

<sup>23</sup> He said to all, “If anyone desires to come after me, let him deny himself, take up his cross, and follow me. <sup>24</sup> For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever will lose his life for my sake, will save it. <sup>25</sup> For what does it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses or forfeits his own self? <sup>26</sup> For whoever will be ashamed of me and of my words, of him will the Son of Man be ashamed, when he comes in his glory, and the glory of the Father, and of the holy angels. <sup>27</sup> But I tell you the truth: There are some of those who stand here who will in no way taste of death until they see God’s Kingdom.”

<sup>28</sup> About eight days after these sayings, he took with him Peter, John, and James, and went up onto the mountain to pray. <sup>29</sup> As he was praying, the appearance of his face was altered, and his clothing became white and dazzling. <sup>30</sup> Behold, two men were talking with him, who were Moses and Elijah, <sup>31</sup> who appeared in glory, and spoke of his departure, which he was about to accomplish at Jerusalem.

<sup>32</sup> Now Peter and those who were with him were heavy with sleep, but when they were fully awake, they saw his glory, and the two men who stood with him. <sup>33</sup> As they were parting from him, Peter said to Jesus, “Master, it is good for us to be here. Let’s make three tents: one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah,” not knowing what he said.

<sup>34</sup> While he said these things, a cloud came and overshadowed them, and they were afraid as they entered into the cloud. <sup>35</sup> A voice came out of the cloud, saying, “This is my beloved Son. Listen to him!” <sup>36</sup> When the voice came, Jesus was found alone. They were silent, and told no one in those days any of the things which they had seen.

<sup>37</sup> On the next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a great multitude met him. <sup>38</sup> Behold, a man from the crowd called out, saying, “Teacher, I beg you to look at my son, for he is my only child. <sup>39</sup> Behold, a spirit takes him, he suddenly cries out, and it convulses him so that he foams, and it hardly departs from him, bruising him severely. <sup>40</sup> I begged

your disciples to cast it out, and they couldn't."

<sup>41</sup> Jesus answered, "Faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you and bear with you? Bring your son here."

<sup>42</sup> While he was still coming, the demon threw him down and convulsed him violently. But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, healed the boy, and gave him back to his father. <sup>43</sup> They were all astonished at the majesty of God.

But while all were marvelling at all the things which Jesus did, he said to his disciples, <sup>44</sup> "Let these words sink into your ears, for the Son of Man will be delivered up into the hands of men." <sup>45</sup> But they didn't understand this saying. It was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it, and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

<sup>46</sup> An argument arose among them about which of them was the greatest. <sup>47</sup> Jesus, perceiving the reasoning of their hearts, took a little child, and set him by his side, <sup>48</sup> and said to them, "Whoever receives this little child in my name receives me. Whoever receives me receives him who sent me. For whoever is least among you all, this one will be great."

<sup>49</sup> John answered, "Master, we saw someone casting out demons in your name, and we forbade him, because he doesn't follow with us."

<sup>50</sup> Jesus said to him, "Don't forbid him, for he who is not against us is for us."

<sup>51</sup> It came to pass, when the days were near that he should be taken up, he intently set his face to go to Jerusalem <sup>52</sup> and sent messengers before his face. They went and entered into a village of the Samaritans, so as to prepare for him. <sup>53</sup> They didn't receive him, because he was traveling with his face set toward Jerusalem. <sup>54</sup> When his disciples, James and John, saw this, they said, "Lord, do you want us to command fire to come down from the sky and destroy them, just as Elijah did?"

<sup>55</sup> But he turned and rebuked them, "You don't know of what kind of spirit you are. <sup>56</sup> For the Son of Man didn't come to destroy men's lives, but to save them."

They went to another village. <sup>57</sup> As they went on the way, a certain man

said to him, "I want to follow you wherever you go, Lord."

<sup>58</sup> Jesus said to him, "The foxes have holes, and the birds of the sky have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head."

<sup>59</sup> He said to another, "Follow me!"

But he said, "Lord, allow me first to go and bury my father."

<sup>60</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Leave the dead to bury their own dead, but you go and announce God's Kingdom."

<sup>61</sup> Another also said, "I want to follow you, Lord, but first allow me to say good-bye to those who are at my house."

<sup>62</sup> But Jesus said to him, "No one, having put his hand to the plough and looking back, is fit for God's Kingdom."

**10** Now after these things, the Lord also appointed seventy others, and sent them two by two ahead of him into every city and place where he was about to come.

<sup>2</sup> Then he said to them, "The harvest is indeed plentiful, but the labourers are few. Pray therefore to the Lord of the harvest, that he may send out labourers into his harvest. <sup>3</sup> Go your ways. Behold, I send you out as lambs among wolves. <sup>4</sup> Carry no purse, nor wallet, nor sandals. Greet no one on the way. <sup>5</sup> Into whatever house you enter, first say, 'Peace be to this house.' <sup>6</sup> If a son of peace is there, your peace will rest on him; but if not, it will return to you. <sup>7</sup> Remain in that same house, eating and drinking the things they give, for the labourer is worthy of his wages. Don't go from house to house. <sup>8</sup> Into whatever city you enter, and they receive you, eat the things that are set before you. <sup>9</sup> Heal the sick who are there, and tell them, 'God's Kingdom has come near to you.' <sup>10</sup> But into whatever city you enter, and they don't receive you, go out into its streets and say, <sup>11</sup> 'Even the dust from your city that clings to us, we wipe off against you. Nevertheless know this, that God's Kingdom has come near to you.' <sup>12</sup> I tell you, it will be more tolerable in that day for Sodom than for that city.

<sup>13</sup> “Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. <sup>14</sup> But it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgment than for you. <sup>15</sup> You, Capernaum, who are exalted to heaven, will be brought down to Hades. <sup>16</sup> Whoever listens to you listens to me, and whoever rejects you rejects me. Whoever rejects me rejects him who sent me.”

<sup>17</sup> The seventy returned with joy, saying, “Lord, even the demons are subject to us in your name!”

<sup>18</sup> He said to them, “I saw Satan having fallen like lightning from heaven. <sup>19</sup> Behold, I give you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy. Nothing will in any way hurt you. <sup>20</sup> Nevertheless, don’t rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”

<sup>21</sup> In that same hour Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, “I thank you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that you have hidden these things from the wise and understanding, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in your sight.”

<sup>22</sup> Turning to the disciples, he said, “All things have been delivered to me by my Father. No one knows who the Son is, except the Father, and who the Father is, except the Son, and he to whomever the Son desires to reveal him.”

<sup>23</sup> Turning to the disciples, he said privately, “Blessed are the eyes which see the things that you see, <sup>24</sup> for I tell you that many prophets and kings desired to see the things which you see, and didn’t see them, and to hear the things which you hear, and didn’t hear them.”

<sup>25</sup> Behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tested him, saying, “Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?”

<sup>26</sup> He said to him, “What is written in the law? How do you read it?”

<sup>27</sup> He answered, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbour as yourself.”

<sup>28</sup> He said to him, “You have answered correctly. Do this, and you will live.”

<sup>29</sup> But he, desiring to justify himself, asked Jesus, “Who is my neighbour?”

<sup>30</sup> Jesus answered, “A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and he fell among robbers, who both stripped him and beat him, and departed, leaving him half dead. <sup>31</sup> By chance a certain priest was going down that way. When he saw him, he passed by on the other side. <sup>32</sup> In the same way a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him, passed by on the other side. <sup>33</sup> But a certain Samaritan, as he travelled, came where he was. When he saw him, he was moved with compassion, <sup>34</sup> came to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on oil and wine. He set him on his own animal, brought him to an inn, and took care of him. <sup>35</sup> On the next day, when he departed, he took out two denarii, gave them to the host, and said to him, ‘Take care of him. Whatever you spend beyond that, I will repay you when I return.’ <sup>36</sup> Now which of these three do you think seemed to be a neighbour to him who fell among the robbers?”

<sup>37</sup> He said, “He who showed mercy on him.”

Then Jesus said to him, “Go and do likewise.”

<sup>38</sup> As they went on their way, he entered into a certain village, and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. <sup>39</sup> She had a sister called Mary, who also sat at Jesus’ feet, and heard his word. <sup>40</sup> But Martha was distracted with much serving, and she came up to him, and said, “Lord, don’t you care that my sister left me to serve alone? Ask her therefore to help me.”

<sup>41</sup> Jesus answered her, “Martha, Martha, you are anxious and troubled about many things, <sup>42</sup> but one thing is needed. Mary has chosen the good part, which will not be taken away from her.”

**11** When he finished praying in a certain place, one of his disciples said to him, “Lord, teach us to pray, just as John also taught his disciples.”

<sup>2</sup> He said to them, “When you pray, say,

‘Our Father in heaven,  
may your name be kept holy.

May your Kingdom come.

May your will be done on earth, as it is in heaven.

<sup>3</sup> Give us day by day our daily bread.

<sup>4</sup> Forgive us our sins,

for we ourselves also forgive everyone who is indebted to us.

Bring us not into temptation,

but deliver us from the evil one.”

<sup>5</sup> He said to them, “Which of you, if you go to a friend at midnight, and tell him, ‘Friend, lend me three loaves of bread, <sup>6</sup> for a friend of mine has come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him,’ <sup>7</sup> and he from within will answer and say, ‘Don’t bother me. The door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed. I can’t get up and give it to you’? <sup>8</sup> I tell you, although he will not rise and give it to him because he is his friend, yet because of his persistence, he will get up and give him as many as he needs.

<sup>9</sup> “I tell you, keep asking, and it will be given you. Keep seeking, and you will find. Keep knocking, and it will be opened to you. <sup>10</sup> For everyone who asks receives. He who seeks finds. To him who knocks it will be opened.

<sup>11</sup> “Which of you fathers, if your son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, he won’t give him a snake instead of a fish, will he? <sup>12</sup> Or if he asks for an egg, he won’t give him a scorpion, will he? <sup>13</sup> If you then, being evil, know how to give good



gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him?"

<sup>14</sup> He was casting out a demon, and it was mute. When the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the multitudes marvelled. <sup>15</sup> But some of them said, "He casts out demons by Beelzebul, the prince of the demons." <sup>16</sup> Others, testing him, sought from him a sign from heaven. <sup>17</sup> But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them, "Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation. A house divided against itself falls. <sup>18</sup> If Satan also is divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? For you say that I cast out demons by Beelzebul. <sup>19</sup> But if I cast out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they will be your judges. <sup>20</sup> But if I by God's finger cast out demons, then God's Kingdom has come to you.

<sup>21</sup> "When the strong man, fully armed, guards his own dwelling, his goods are safe. <sup>22</sup> But when someone stronger attacks him and overcomes him, he takes from him his whole armour in which he trusted, and divides his plunder.

<sup>23</sup> "He that is not with me is against me. He who doesn't gather with me scatters. <sup>24</sup> The unclean spirit, when he has gone out of the man, passes through dry places, seeking rest, and finding none, he says, 'I will turn back to my house from which I came out.' <sup>25</sup> When he returns, he finds it swept and put in order. <sup>26</sup> Then he goes, and takes seven other spirits more evil than himself, and they enter in and dwell there. The last state of that man becomes worse than the first."

<sup>27</sup> It came to pass, as he said these things, a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said to him, "Blessed is the womb that bore you, and the breasts which nursed you!"

<sup>28</sup> But he said, "On the contrary, blessed are those who hear the word of God, and keep it."

<sup>29</sup> When the multitudes were gathering together to him, he began to say, "This is an evil generation. It seeks after a sign. No sign will be

given to it but the sign of Jonah, the prophet. <sup>30</sup> For even as Jonah became a sign to the Ninevites, so the Son of Man will also be to this generation. <sup>31</sup> The Queen of the South will rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and will condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, one greater than Solomon is here. <sup>32</sup> The men of Nineveh will stand up in the judgment with this generation, and will condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and behold, one greater than Jonah is here.

<sup>33</sup> “No one, when he has lit a lamp, puts it in a cellar or under a basket, but on a stand, that those who come in may see the light. <sup>34</sup> The lamp of the body is the eye. Therefore when your eye is good, your whole body is also full of light; but when it is evil, your body also is full of darkness. <sup>35</sup> Therefore see whether the light that is in you isn’t darkness. <sup>36</sup> If therefore your whole body is full of light, having no part dark, it will be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining gives you light.”

<sup>37</sup> Now as he spoke, a certain Pharisee asked him to dine with him. He went in and sat at the table. <sup>38</sup> When the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed himself before dinner. <sup>39</sup> The Lord said to him, “Now you Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. <sup>40</sup> You foolish ones, didn’t he who made the outside make the inside also? <sup>41</sup> But give for gifts to the needy those things which are within, and behold, all things will be clean to you. <sup>42</sup> But woe to you Pharisees! For you tithe mint and rue and every herb, but you bypass justice and God’s love. You ought to have done these, and not to have left the other undone. <sup>43</sup> Woe to you Pharisees! For you love the best seats in the synagogues, and the greetings in the marketplaces. <sup>44</sup> Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like hidden graves, and the men who walk over them don’t know it.”

<sup>45</sup> One of the lawyers answered him, “Teacher, in saying this you insult us also.”

<sup>46</sup> He said, “Woe to you lawyers also! For you load men with burdens that are difficult to carry, and you yourselves won’t even lift one finger to help carry those burdens. <sup>47</sup> Woe to you! For you build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. <sup>48</sup> So you testify and consent to the works of your fathers. For they killed them, and you build their tombs. <sup>49</sup> Therefore also the wisdom of God said, ‘I will send to them prophets and apostles; and some of them they will kill and persecute, <sup>50</sup> that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; <sup>51</sup> from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary.’ Yes, I tell you, it will be required of this generation. <sup>52</sup> Woe to you lawyers! For you took away the key of knowledge. You didn’t enter in yourselves, and those who were entering in, you hindered.”

<sup>53</sup> As he said these things to them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to be terribly angry, and to draw many things out of him; <sup>54</sup> lying in wait for him, and seeking to catch him in something he might say, that they might accuse him.

**12** Meanwhile, when a multitude of many thousands had gathered together, so much so that they trampled on each other, he began to tell his disciples first of all, “Beware of the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. <sup>2</sup> But there is nothing covered up that will not be revealed, nor hidden that will not be known. <sup>3</sup> Therefore whatever you have said in the darkness will be heard in the light. What you have spoken in the ear in the inner rooms will be proclaimed on the housetops.

<sup>4</sup> “I tell you, my friends, don’t be afraid of those who kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. <sup>5</sup> But I will warn you whom you should fear. Fear him who after he has killed, has power to cast into Gehenna. Yes, I tell you, fear him.

<sup>6</sup> “Aren’t five sparrows sold for two assaria coins ? Not one of them is forgotten by God. <sup>7</sup> But the very hairs of your head are all counted. Therefore don’t be afraid. You are of more value than many sparrows.

<sup>8</sup> “I tell you, everyone who confesses me before men, the Son of Man will also confess before the angels of God; <sup>9</sup> but he who denies me in the presence of men will be denied in the presence of God’s angels. <sup>10</sup> Everyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but those who blaspheme against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. <sup>11</sup> When they bring you before the synagogues, the rulers, and the authorities, don’t be anxious how or what you will answer, or what you will say; <sup>12</sup> for the Holy Spirit will teach you in that same hour what you must say.”

<sup>13</sup> One of the multitude said to him, “Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me.”

<sup>14</sup> But he said to him, “Man, who made me a judge or an arbitrator over you?” <sup>15</sup> He said to them, “Beware! Keep yourselves from covetousness, for a man’s life doesn’t consist of the abundance of the things which he possesses.”

<sup>16</sup> He spoke a parable to them, saying, “The ground of a certain rich man produced abundantly. <sup>17</sup> He reasoned within himself, saying, ‘What will I do, because I don’t have room to store my crops?’ <sup>18</sup> He said, ‘This is what I will do. I will pull down my barns, build bigger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. <sup>19</sup> I will tell my soul, “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years. Take your ease, eat, drink, and be merry.”’”

<sup>20</sup> “But God said to him, ‘You foolish one, tonight your soul is required of you. The things which you have prepared—whose will they be?’ <sup>21</sup> So is he who lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.”

<sup>22</sup> He said to his disciples, “Therefore I tell you, don’t be anxious for your life, what you will eat, nor yet for your body, what you will wear. <sup>23</sup> Life is more than food, and the body is more than clothing. <sup>24</sup> Consider the ravens: they don’t sow, they don’t reap, they have no warehouse or barn, and God feeds them. How much more valuable are you than birds! <sup>25</sup> Which of you by being anxious can add a cubit to his height? <sup>26</sup> If then you aren’t able to do even

the least things, why are you anxious about the rest? <sup>27</sup> Consider the lilies, how they grow. They don't toil, neither do they spin; yet I tell you, even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. <sup>28</sup> But if this is how God clothes the grass in the field, which today exists, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, how much more will he clothe you, O you of little faith? <sup>29</sup> Don't seek what you will eat or what you will drink; neither be anxious. <sup>30</sup> For the nations of the world seek after all of these things, but your Father knows that you need these things. <sup>31</sup> But seek God's Kingdom, and all these things will be added to you. <sup>32</sup> Don't be afraid, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom. <sup>33</sup> Sell that which you have, and give gifts to the needy. Make for yourselves purses which don't grow old, a treasure in the heavens that doesn't fail, where no thief approaches, neither moth destroys. <sup>34</sup> For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

<sup>35</sup> "Let your waist be dressed and your lamps burning. <sup>36</sup> Be like men watching for their lord, when he returns from the wedding feast; that when he comes and knocks, they may immediately open to him. <sup>37</sup> Blessed are those servants whom the lord will find watching when he comes. Most certainly I tell you that he will dress himself, make them recline, and will come and serve them. <sup>38</sup> They will be blessed if he comes in the second or third watch, and finds them so. <sup>39</sup> But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched, and not allowed his house to be broken into. <sup>40</sup> Therefore be ready also, for the Son of Man is coming in an hour that you don't expect him."

<sup>41</sup> Peter said to him, "Lord, are you telling this parable to us, or to everybody?"

<sup>42</sup> The Lord said, "Who then is the faithful and wise steward, whom his lord will set over his household, to give them their portion of food at the right times? <sup>43</sup> Blessed is that servant whom his lord will find doing so when he comes. <sup>44</sup> Truly I tell you, that he will set him over all that he has. <sup>45</sup> But if that servant says in his heart, 'My lord delays his coming,' and begins to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken, <sup>46</sup> then the

lord of that servant will come in a day when he isn't expecting him, and in an hour that he doesn't know, and will cut him in two, and place his portion with the unfaithful. <sup>47</sup> That servant, who knew his lord's will, and didn't prepare, nor do what he wanted, will be beaten with many stripes, <sup>48</sup> but he who didn't know, and did things worthy of stripes, will be beaten with few stripes. To whomever much is given, of him will much be required; and to whom much was entrusted, of him more will be asked.

<sup>49</sup> "I came to throw fire on the earth. I wish it were already kindled. <sup>50</sup> But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how distressed I am until it is accomplished! <sup>51</sup> Do you think that I have come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, no, but rather division. <sup>52</sup> For from now on, there will be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. <sup>53</sup> They will be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against her mother; mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."

<sup>54</sup> He said to the multitudes also, "When you see a cloud rising from the west, immediately you say, 'A shower is coming,' and so it happens. <sup>55</sup> When a south wind blows, you say, 'There will be a scorching heat,' and it happens. <sup>56</sup> You hypocrites! You know how to interpret the appearance of the earth and the sky, but how is it that you don't interpret this time? <sup>57</sup> Why don't you judge for yourselves what is right? <sup>58</sup> For when you are going with your adversary before the magistrate, try diligently on the way to be released from him, lest perhaps he drag you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and the officer throw you into prison. <sup>59</sup> I tell you, you will by no means get out of there, until you have paid the very last penny."

**13** Now there were some present at the same time who told him about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mixed with their sacrifices. <sup>2</sup> Jesus answered them, "Do you think that these Galileans were worse sinners than all the other Galileans, because they suffered such things? <sup>3</sup> I tell you, no, but unless you repent, you will all perish in the same way. <sup>4</sup> Or those eighteen, on whom the

tower in Siloam fell and killed them; do you think that they were worse offenders than all the men who dwell in Jerusalem? <sup>5</sup> I tell you, no, but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the same way.”

<sup>6</sup> He spoke this parable. “A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit on it, and found none. <sup>7</sup> He said to the vine dresser, ‘Behold, these three years I have come looking for fruit on this fig tree, and found none. Cut it down. Why does it waste the soil?’ <sup>8</sup> He answered, ‘Lord, leave it alone this year also, until I dig around it and fertilize it. <sup>9</sup> If it bears fruit, fine; but if not, after that, you can cut it down.’”

<sup>10</sup> He was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath day. <sup>11</sup> Behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years. She was bent over, and could in no way straighten herself up. <sup>12</sup> When Jesus saw her, he called her, and said to her, “Woman, you are freed from your infirmity.” <sup>13</sup> He laid his hands on her, and immediately she stood up straight and glorified God.

<sup>14</sup> The ruler of the synagogue, being indignant because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath, said to the multitude, “There are six days in which men ought to work. Therefore come on those days and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day!”

<sup>15</sup> Therefore the Lord answered him, “You hypocrites! Doesn’t each one of you free his ox or his donkey from the stall on the Sabbath, and lead him away to water? <sup>16</sup> Ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham whom Satan had bound eighteen long years, be freed from this bondage on the Sabbath day?”

<sup>17</sup> As he said these things, all his adversaries were disappointed and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

<sup>18</sup> He said, “What is God’s Kingdom like? To what shall I compare it? <sup>19</sup> It is like a grain of mustard seed which a man took and put in

his own garden. It grew and became a large tree, and the birds of the sky live in its branches.”

<sup>20</sup> Again he said, “To what shall I compare God’s Kingdom? <sup>21</sup> It is like yeast, which a woman took and hid in three measures of flour, until it was all leavened.”

<sup>22</sup> He went on his way through cities and villages, teaching, and traveling on to Jerusalem. <sup>23</sup> One said to him, “Lord, are they few who are saved?”

He said to them, <sup>24</sup> “Strive to enter in by the narrow door, for many, I tell you, will seek to enter in and will not be able. <sup>25</sup> When once the master of the house has risen up, and has shut the door, and you begin to stand outside and to knock at the door, saying, ‘Lord, Lord, open to us!’ then he will answer and tell you, ‘I don’t know you or where you come from.’ <sup>26</sup> Then you will begin to say, ‘We ate and drank in your presence, and you taught in our streets.’ <sup>27</sup> He will say, ‘I tell you, I don’t know where you come from. Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity.’ <sup>28</sup> There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and all the prophets in God’s Kingdom, and yourselves being thrown outside. <sup>29</sup> They will come from the east, west, north, and south, and will sit down in God’s Kingdom. <sup>30</sup> Behold, there are some who are last who will be first, and there are some who are first who will be last.”

<sup>31</sup> On that same day, some Pharisees came, saying to him, “Get out of here, and go away, for Herod wants to kill you.”

<sup>32</sup> He said to them, “Go and tell that fox, ‘Behold, I cast out demons and perform cures today and tomorrow, and the third day I complete my mission. <sup>33</sup> Nevertheless I must go on my way today and tomorrow and the next day, for it can’t be that a prophet would perish outside of Jerusalem.’

<sup>34</sup> “Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, like a hen gathers her own brood under her wings,



and you refused! <sup>35</sup> Behold, your house is left to you desolate. I tell you, you will not see me until you say, ‘Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!’”

**14** When he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a Sabbath to eat bread, they were watching him. <sup>2</sup> Behold, a certain man who had dropsy was in front of him. <sup>3</sup> Jesus, answering, spoke to the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, “Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?”

<sup>4</sup> But they were silent.

He took him, and healed him, and let him go. <sup>5</sup> He answered them, “Which of you, if your son or an ox fell into a well, wouldn’t immediately pull him out on a Sabbath day?”

<sup>6</sup> They couldn’t answer him regarding these things.

<sup>7</sup> He spoke a parable to those who were invited, when he noticed how they chose the best seats, and said to them, <sup>8</sup> “When you are invited by anyone to a wedding feast, don’t sit in the best seat, since perhaps someone more honourable than you might be invited by him, <sup>9</sup> and he who invited both of you would come and tell you, ‘Make room for this person.’ Then you would begin, with shame, to take the lowest place. <sup>10</sup> But when you are invited, go and sit in the lowest place, so that when he who invited you comes, he may tell you, ‘Friend, move up higher.’ Then you will be honoured in the presence of all who sit at the table with you. <sup>11</sup> For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.”

<sup>12</sup> He also said to the one who had invited him, “When you make a dinner or a supper, don’t call your friends, nor your brothers, nor your kinsmen, nor rich neighbours, or perhaps they might also return the favour, and pay you back. <sup>13</sup> But when you make a feast, ask the poor, the maimed, the lame, or the blind; <sup>14</sup> and you will be blessed, because they don’t have the resources to repay you. For you will be repaid in the resurrection of the righteous.”

<sup>15</sup> When one of those who sat at the table with him heard these things, he said to him, “Blessed is he who will feast in God’s Kingdom!”

<sup>16</sup> But he said to him, “A certain man made a great supper, and he invited many people. <sup>17</sup> He sent out his servant at supper time to tell those who were invited, ‘Come, for everything is ready now.’ <sup>18</sup> They all as one began to make excuses.

“The first said to him, ‘I have bought a field, and I must go and see it. Please have me excused.’

<sup>19</sup> “Another said, ‘I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I must go try them out. Please have me excused.’

<sup>20</sup> “Another said, ‘I have married a wife, and therefore I can’t come.’

<sup>21</sup> “That servant came, and told his lord these things. Then the master of the house, being angry, said to his servant, ‘Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in the poor, maimed, blind, and lame.’

<sup>22</sup> “The servant said, ‘Lord, it is done as you commanded, and there is still room.’

<sup>23</sup> “The lord said to the servant, ‘Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled. <sup>24</sup> For I tell you that none of those men who were invited will taste of my supper.’”

<sup>25</sup> Now great multitudes were going with him. He turned and said to them, <sup>26</sup> “If anyone comes to me, and doesn’t disregard his own father, mother, wife, children, brothers, and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he can’t be my disciple. <sup>27</sup> Whoever doesn’t bear his own cross, and come after me, can’t be my disciple. <sup>28</sup> For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doesn’t first sit down and count the cost, to see if he has enough to complete it? <sup>29</sup> Or perhaps, when he has laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, everyone who sees begins

to mock him, <sup>30</sup> saying, ‘This man began to build, and wasn’t able to finish.’ <sup>31</sup> Or what king, as he goes to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and consider whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him who comes against him with twenty thousand? <sup>32</sup> Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sends an envoy, and asks for conditions of peace. <sup>33</sup> So therefore whoever of you who doesn’t renounce all that he has, he can’t be my disciple. <sup>34</sup> Salt is good, but if the salt becomes flat and tasteless, with what do you season it? <sup>35</sup> It is fit neither for the soil nor for the manure pile. It is thrown out. He who has ears to hear, let him hear.”

**15** Now all the tax collectors and sinners were coming close to him to hear him. <sup>2</sup> The Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, “This man welcomes sinners, and eats with them.”

<sup>3</sup> He told them this parable. <sup>4</sup> “Which of you men, if you had one hundred sheep, and lost one of them, wouldn’t leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go after the one that was lost, until he found it? <sup>5</sup> When he has found it, he carries it on his shoulders, rejoicing. <sup>6</sup> When he comes home, he calls together his friends and his neighbours, saying to them, ‘Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost!’ <sup>7</sup> I tell you that even so there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents, than over ninety-nine righteous people who need no repentance. <sup>8</sup> Or what woman, if she had ten drachma<sup>[i]</sup> coins, if she lost one drachma coin, wouldn’t light a lamp, sweep the house, and seek diligently until she found it? <sup>9</sup> When she has found it, she calls together her friends and neighbours, saying, ‘Rejoice with me, for I have found the drachma which I had lost.’ <sup>10</sup> Even so, I tell you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner repenting.”

<sup>11</sup> He said, “A certain man had two sons. <sup>12</sup> The younger of them said to his father, ‘Father, give me my share of your property.’ So he divided his livelihood between them. <sup>13</sup> Not many days after, the younger son gathered all of this together and travelled into a far country. There he wasted his property with riotous living. <sup>14</sup> When he had spent all of it, there arose a severe famine in that country, and he began to be in need. <sup>15</sup> He went and joined himself to one of the

citizens of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed pigs. <sup>16</sup> He wanted to fill his belly with the husks that the pigs ate, but no one gave him any. <sup>17</sup> But when he came to himself he said, 'How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough to spare, and I'm dying with hunger! <sup>18</sup> I will get up and go to my father, and will tell him, "Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in your sight. <sup>19</sup> I am no more worthy to be called your son. Make me as one of your hired servants."'"

<sup>20</sup> "He arose, and came to his father. But while he was still far off, his father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. <sup>21</sup> The son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight. I am no longer worthy to be called your son.'

<sup>22</sup> "But the father said to his servants, 'Bring out the best robe, and put it on him. Put a ring on his hand, and sandals on his feet. <sup>23</sup> Bring the fattened calf, kill it, and let's eat, and celebrate; <sup>24</sup> for this, my son, was dead, and is alive again. He was lost, and is found.' Then they began to celebrate.

<sup>25</sup> "Now his elder son was in the field. As he came near to the house, he heard music and dancing. <sup>26</sup> He called one of the servants to him, and asked what was going on. <sup>27</sup> He said to him, 'Your brother has come, and your father has killed the fattened calf, because he has received him back safe and healthy.' <sup>28</sup> But he was angry, and would not go in. Therefore his father came out, and begged him. <sup>29</sup> But he answered his father, 'Behold, these many years I have served you, and I never disobeyed a commandment of yours, but you never gave me a goat, that I might celebrate with my friends. <sup>30</sup> But when this your son came, who has devoured your living with prostitutes, you killed the fattened calf for him.'

<sup>31</sup> "He said to him, 'Son, you are always with me, and all that is mine is yours. <sup>32</sup> But it was appropriate to celebrate and be glad, for this, your brother, was dead, and is alive again. He was lost, and is found.'"

**16** He also said to his disciples, “There was a certain rich man who had a manager. An accusation was made to him that this man was wasting his possessions. <sup>2</sup> He called him, and said to him, ‘What is this that I hear about you? Give an accounting of your management, for you can no longer be manager.’

<sup>3</sup> “The manager said within himself, ‘What will I do, seeing that my lord is taking away the management position from me? I don’t have strength to dig. I am ashamed to beg. <sup>4</sup> I know what I will do, so that when I am removed from management, they may receive me into their houses.’ <sup>5</sup> Calling each one of his lord’s debtors to him, he said to the first, ‘How much do you owe to my lord?’ <sup>6</sup> He said, ‘A hundred batos of oil.’ He said to him, ‘Take your bill, and sit down quickly and write fifty.’ <sup>7</sup> Then he said to another, ‘How much do you owe?’ He said, ‘A hundred cors of wheat.’ He said to him, ‘Take your bill, and write eighty.’

<sup>8</sup> “His lord commended the dishonest manager because he had done wisely, for the children of this world are, in their own generation, wiser than the children of the light. <sup>9</sup> I tell you, make for yourselves friends by means of unrighteous mammon, so that when you fail, they may receive you into the eternal tents. <sup>10</sup> He who is faithful in a very little is faithful also in much. He who is dishonest in a very little is also dishonest in much. <sup>11</sup> If therefore you have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? <sup>12</sup> If you have not been faithful in that which is another’s, who will give you that which is your own? <sup>13</sup> No servant can serve two masters, for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. You aren’t able to serve God and Mammon.”

<sup>14</sup> The Pharisees, who were lovers of money, also heard all these things, and they scoffed at him. <sup>15</sup> He said to them, “You are those who justify yourselves in the sight of men, but God knows your hearts. For that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God. <sup>16</sup> The law and the prophets were until John. From that time the Good News of God’s Kingdom is preached, and everyone is forcing his way into it. <sup>17</sup> But it is easier for heaven and

earth to pass away than for one tiny stroke of a pen in the law to fall. <sup>18</sup> Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery. He who marries one who is divorced from a husband commits adultery.

<sup>19</sup> “Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, living in luxury every day. <sup>20</sup> A certain beggar, named Lazarus, was taken to his gate, full of sores, <sup>21</sup> and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man’s table. Yes, even the dogs came and licked his sores. <sup>22</sup> The beggar died, and he was carried away by the angels to Abraham’s bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried. <sup>23</sup> In Hades, he lifted up his eyes, being in torment, and saw Abraham far off, and Lazarus at his bosom. <sup>24</sup> He cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue! For I am in anguish in this flame.’

<sup>25</sup> “But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that you, in your lifetime, received your good things, and Lazarus, in the same way, bad things. But here he is now comforted, and you are in anguish. <sup>26</sup> Besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that those who want to pass from here to you are not able, and that no one may cross over from there to us.’

<sup>27</sup> “He said, ‘I ask you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father’s house; <sup>28</sup> for I have five brothers, that he may testify to them, so they won’t also come into this place of torment.’

<sup>29</sup> “But Abraham said to him, ‘They have Moses and the prophets. Let them listen to them.’

<sup>30</sup> “He said, ‘No, father Abraham, but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent.’

<sup>31</sup> “He said to him, ‘If they don’t listen to Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded if one rises from the dead.’”

**17** He said to the disciples, “It is impossible that no occasions of stumbling should come, but woe to him through whom they come! <sup>2</sup> It would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of these little ones to stumble. <sup>3</sup> Be careful. If your brother sins against you, rebuke him. If he repents, forgive him. <sup>4</sup> If he sins against you seven times in the day, and seven times returns, saying, ‘I repent,’ you shall forgive him.”

<sup>5</sup> The apostles said to the Lord, “Increase our faith.”

<sup>6</sup> The Lord said, “If you had faith like a grain of mustard seed, you would tell this sycamore tree, ‘Be uprooted, and be planted in the sea,’ and it would obey you. <sup>7</sup> But who is there among you, having a servant ploughing or keeping sheep, that will say when he comes in from the field, ‘Come immediately and sit down at the table,’ <sup>8</sup> and will not rather tell him, ‘Prepare my supper, clothe yourself properly, and serve me, while I eat and drink. Afterward you shall eat and drink’? <sup>9</sup> Does he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded? I think not. <sup>10</sup> Even so you also, when you have done all the things that are commanded you, say, ‘We are unworthy servants. We have done our duty.’”

<sup>11</sup> As he was on his way to Jerusalem, he was passing along the borders of Samaria and Galilee. <sup>12</sup> As he entered into a certain village, ten men who were lepers met him, who stood at a distance. <sup>13</sup> They lifted up their voices, saying, “Jesus, Master, have mercy on us!”

<sup>14</sup> When he saw them, he said to them, “Go and show yourselves to the priests.” As they went, they were cleansed. <sup>15</sup> One of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, glorifying God with a loud voice. <sup>16</sup> He fell on his face at Jesus’ feet, giving him thanks; and he was a Samaritan. <sup>17</sup> Jesus answered, “Weren’t the ten cleansed? But where are the nine? <sup>18</sup> Were there none found who returned to give glory to God, except this foreigner?” <sup>19</sup> Then he said to him, “Get up, and go your way. Your faith has healed you.”

<sup>20</sup> Being asked by the Pharisees when God's Kingdom would come, he answered them, "God's Kingdom doesn't come with observation; <sup>21</sup> neither will they say, 'Look, here!' or, 'Look, there!' for behold, God's Kingdom is within you."

<sup>22</sup> He said to the disciples, "The days will come when you will desire to see one of the days of the Son of Man, and you will not see it. <sup>23</sup> They will tell you, 'Look, here!' or 'Look, there!' Don't go away or follow after them, <sup>24</sup> for as the lightning, when it flashes out of one part under the sky, shines to another part under the sky; so will the Son of Man be in his day. <sup>25</sup> But first, he must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation. <sup>26</sup> As it was in the days of Noah, even so it will also be in the days of the Son of Man. <sup>27</sup> They ate, they drank, they married, and they were given in marriage until the day that Noah entered into the ship, and the flood came and destroyed them all. <sup>28</sup> Likewise, even as it was in the days of Lot: they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built; <sup>29</sup> but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom, it rained fire and sulfur from the sky and destroyed them all. <sup>30</sup> It will be the same way in the day that the Son of Man is revealed. <sup>31</sup> In that day, he who will be on the housetop and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away. Let him who is in the field likewise not turn back. <sup>32</sup> Remember Lot's wife! <sup>33</sup> Whoever seeks to save his life loses it, but whoever loses his life preserves it. <sup>34</sup> I tell you, in that night there will be two people in one bed. One will be taken and the other will be left. <sup>35</sup> There will be two grinding grain together. One will be taken and the other will be left." <sup>36</sup> There will be two grinding grain together. One will be taken and the other will be left."

<sup>37</sup> They, answering, asked him, "Where, Lord?"

He said to them, "Where the body is, there the vultures will also be gathered together."

**18** He also spoke a parable to them that they must always pray, and not give up, <sup>2</sup> saying, "There was a judge in a certain city who didn't fear God, and didn't respect man. <sup>3</sup> A widow was in that city, and she often came to him, saying, 'Defend me from my



adversary!’<sup>4</sup> He wouldn’t for a while, but afterward he said to himself, ‘Though I neither fear God, nor respect man,<sup>5</sup> yet because this widow bothers me, I will defend her, or else she will wear me out by her continual coming.’”

<sup>6</sup> The Lord said, “Listen to what the unrighteous judge says. <sup>7</sup> Won’t God avenge his chosen ones who are crying out to him day and night, and yet he exercises patience with them? <sup>8</sup> I tell you that he will avenge them quickly. Nevertheless, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith on the earth?”

<sup>9</sup> He also spoke this parable to certain people who were convinced of their own righteousness, and who despised all others. <sup>10</sup> “Two men went up into the temple to pray; one was a Pharisee, and the other was a tax collector. <sup>11</sup> The Pharisee stood and prayed to himself like this: ‘God, I thank you that I am not like the rest of men, extortionists, unrighteous, adulterers, or even like this tax collector. <sup>12</sup> I fast twice a week. I give tithes of all that I get.’ <sup>13</sup> But the tax collector, standing far away, wouldn’t even lift up his eyes to heaven, but beat his breast, saying, ‘God, be merciful to me, a sinner!’ <sup>14</sup> I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, but he who humbles himself will be exalted.”

<sup>15</sup> They were also bringing their babies to him, that he might touch them. But when the disciples saw it, they rebuked them. <sup>16</sup> Jesus summoned them, saying, “Allow the little children to come to me, and don’t hinder them, for God’s Kingdom belongs to such as these. <sup>17</sup> Most certainly, I tell you, whoever doesn’t receive God’s Kingdom like a little child, he will in no way enter into it.”

<sup>18</sup> A certain ruler asked him, saying, “Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?”

<sup>19</sup> Jesus asked him, “Why do you call me good? No one is good, except one: God. <sup>20</sup> You know the commandments: ‘Don’t commit adultery,’ ‘Don’t murder,’ ‘Don’t steal,’ ‘Don’t give false testimony,’ ‘Honor your father and your mother.’”

<sup>21</sup> He said, “I have observed all these things from my youth up.”

<sup>22</sup> When Jesus heard these things, he said to him, “You still lack one thing. Sell all that you have, and distribute it to the poor. Then you will have treasure in heaven; then come, follow me.”

<sup>23</sup> But when he heard these things, he became very sad, for he was very rich.

<sup>24</sup> Jesus, seeing that he became very sad, said, “How hard it is for those who have riches to enter into God’s Kingdom! <sup>25</sup> For it is easier for a camel to enter in through a needle’s eye than for a rich man to enter into God’s Kingdom.”

<sup>26</sup> Those who heard it said, “Then who can be saved?”

<sup>27</sup> But he said, “The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.”

<sup>28</sup> Peter said, “Look, we have left everything and followed you.”

<sup>29</sup> He said to them, “Most certainly I tell you, there is no one who has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, for God’s Kingdom’s sake, <sup>30</sup> who will not receive many times more in this time, and in the world to come, eternal life.”

<sup>31</sup> He took the twelve aside, and said to them, “Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written through the prophets concerning the Son of Man will be completed. <sup>32</sup> For he will be delivered up to the Gentiles, will be mocked, treated shamefully, and spit on. <sup>33</sup> They will scourge and kill him. On the third day, he will rise again.”

<sup>34</sup> They understood none of these things. This saying was hidden from them, and they didn’t understand the things that were said. <sup>35</sup> As he came near Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the road, begging. <sup>36</sup> Hearing a multitude going by, he asked what this meant. <sup>37</sup> They told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing by. <sup>38</sup> He

cried out, “Jesus, you son of David, have mercy on me!” <sup>39</sup> Those who led the way rebuked him, that he should be quiet; but he cried out all the more, “You son of David, have mercy on me!”

<sup>40</sup> Standing still, Jesus commanded him to be brought to him. When he had come near, he asked him, <sup>41</sup> “What do you want me to do?”

He said, “Lord, that I may see again.”

<sup>42</sup> Jesus said to him, “Receive your sight. Your faith has healed you.”

<sup>43</sup> Immediately he received his sight and followed him, glorifying God. All the people, when they saw it, praised God.

**19** He entered and was passing through Jericho. <sup>2</sup> There was a man named Zacchaeus. He was a chief tax collector, and he was rich. <sup>3</sup> He was trying to see who Jesus was, and couldn’t because of the crowd, because he was short. <sup>4</sup> He ran on ahead, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him, for he was going to pass that way. <sup>5</sup> When Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said to him, “Zacchaeus, hurry and come down, for today I must stay at your house.” <sup>6</sup> He hurried, came down, and received him joyfully. <sup>7</sup> When they saw it, they all murmured, saying, “He has gone in to lodge with a man who is a sinner.”

<sup>8</sup> Zacchaeus stood and said to the Lord, “Behold, Lord, half of my goods I give to the poor. If I have wrongfully exacted anything of anyone, I restore four times as much.”

<sup>9</sup> Jesus said to him, “Today, salvation has come to this house, because he also is a son of Abraham. <sup>10</sup> For the Son of Man came to seek and to save that which was lost.”

<sup>11</sup> As they heard these things, he went on and told a parable, because he was near Jerusalem, and they supposed that God’s Kingdom would be revealed immediately. <sup>12</sup> He said therefore, “A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom and to return. <sup>13</sup> He called ten servants of his and gave them ten mina

coins, and told them, ‘Conduct business until I come.’ <sup>14</sup> But his citizens hated him, and sent an envoy after him, saying, ‘We don’t want this man to reign over us.’

<sup>15</sup> “When he had come back again, having received the kingdom, he commanded these servants, to whom he had given the money, to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by conducting business. <sup>16</sup> The first came before him, saying, ‘Lord, your mina has made ten more minas.’

<sup>17</sup> “He said to him, ‘Well done, you good servant! Because you were found faithful with very little, you shall have authority over ten cities.’

<sup>18</sup> “The second came, saying, ‘Your mina, Lord, has made five minas.’

<sup>19</sup> “So he said to him, ‘And you are to be over five cities.’ <sup>20</sup> Another came, saying, ‘Lord, behold, your mina, which I kept laid away in a handkerchief, <sup>21</sup> for I feared you, because you are an exacting man. You take up that which you didn’t lay down, and reap that which you didn’t sow.’

<sup>22</sup> “He said to him, ‘Out of your own mouth I will judge you, you wicked servant! You knew that I am an exacting man, taking up that which I didn’t lay down, and reaping that which I didn’t sow. <sup>23</sup> Then why didn’t you deposit my money in the bank, and at my coming, I might have earned interest on it?’ <sup>24</sup> He said to those who stood by, ‘Take the mina away from him and give it to him who has the ten minas.’

<sup>25</sup> “They said to him, ‘Lord, he has ten minas!’ <sup>26</sup> ‘For I tell you that to everyone who has, will more be given; but from him who doesn’t have, even that which he has will be taken away from him. <sup>27</sup> But bring those enemies of mine who didn’t want me to reign over them here, and kill them before me.’” <sup>28</sup> Having said these things, he went on ahead, going up to Jerusalem.

<sup>29</sup> When he came near to Bethsphage and Bethany, at the mountain that is called Olivet, he sent two of his disciples, <sup>30</sup> saying, “Go your way into the village on the other side, in which, as you enter, you will find a colt tied, which no man had ever sat upon. Untie it and bring it. <sup>31</sup> If anyone asks you, ‘Why are you untying it?’ say to him: ‘The Lord needs it.’”

<sup>32</sup> Those who were sent went away, and found things just as he had told them. <sup>33</sup> As they were untying the colt, its owners said to them, “Why are you untying the colt?” <sup>34</sup> They said, “The Lord needs it.” <sup>35</sup> Then they brought it to Jesus. They threw their cloaks on the colt, and sat Jesus on them. <sup>36</sup> As he went, they spread their cloaks on the road. <sup>37</sup> As he was now getting near, at the descent of the Mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works which they had seen, <sup>38</sup> saying, “Blessed is the King who comes in the name of the Lord! [Psalm 118:26](#) Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest!”

<sup>39</sup> Some of the Pharisees from the multitude said to him, “Teacher, rebuke your disciples!”

<sup>40</sup> He answered them, “I tell you that if these were silent, the stones would cry out.”

<sup>41</sup> When he came near, he saw the city and wept over it, <sup>42</sup> saying, “If you, even you, had known today the things which belong to your peace! But now, they are hidden from your eyes. <sup>43</sup> For the days will come on you, when your enemies will throw up a barricade against you, surround you, hem you in on every side, <sup>44</sup> and will dash you and your children within you to the ground. They will not leave in you one stone on another, because you didn’t know the time of your visitation.”

<sup>45</sup> He entered into the temple, and began to drive out those who bought and sold in it, <sup>46</sup> saying to them, “It is written, ‘My house is a house of prayer,’ but you have made it a ‘den of robbers’!”

<sup>47</sup> He was teaching daily in the temple, but the chief priests, the scribes, and the leading men among the people sought to destroy him. <sup>48</sup> They couldn't find what they might do, for all the people hung on to every word that he said.

**20** On one of those days, as he was teaching the people in the temple and preaching the Good News, the priests and scribes came to him with the elders.

<sup>2</sup> They asked him, "Tell us: by what authority do you do these things? Or who is giving you this authority?"

<sup>3</sup> He answered them, "I also will ask you one question. Tell me: <sup>4</sup> the baptism of John, was it from heaven, or from men?"

<sup>5</sup> They reasoned with themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' he will say, 'Why didn't you believe him?' <sup>6</sup> But if we say, 'From men,' all the people will stone us, for they are persuaded that John was a prophet." <sup>7</sup> They answered that they didn't know where it was from.

<sup>8</sup> Jesus said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things."

<sup>9</sup> He began to tell the people this parable. "A man planted a vineyard, and rented it out to some farmers, and went into another country for a long time. <sup>10</sup> At the proper season, he sent a servant to the farmers to collect his share of the fruit of the vineyard. But the farmers beat him, and sent him away empty. <sup>11</sup> He sent yet another servant, and they also beat him, and treated him shamefully, and sent him away empty. <sup>12</sup> He sent yet a third, and they also wounded him, and threw him out. <sup>13</sup> The lord of the vineyard said, 'What shall I do? I will send my beloved son. It may be that seeing him, they will respect him.'

<sup>14</sup> "But when the farmers saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, 'This is the heir. Come, let's kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.' <sup>15</sup> Then they threw him out of the vineyard and killed

him. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do to them? <sup>16</sup> He will come and destroy these farmers, and will give the vineyard to others.”

When they heard that, they said, “May that never be!”

<sup>17</sup> But he looked at them and said, “Then what is this that is written,

‘The stone which the builders rejected  
was made the chief cornerstone?’

<sup>18</sup> Everyone who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces,  
but it will crush whomever it falls on to dust.”

<sup>19</sup> The chief priests and the scribes sought to lay hands on him that very hour, but they feared the people—for they knew he had spoken this parable against them. <sup>20</sup> They watched him and sent out spies, who pretended to be righteous, that they might trap him in something he said, so as to deliver him up to the power and authority of the governor. <sup>21</sup> They asked him, “Teacher, we know that you say and teach what is right, and aren’t partial to anyone, but truly teach the way of God. <sup>22</sup> Is it lawful for us to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?”

<sup>23</sup> But he perceived their craftiness, and said to them, “Why do you test me? <sup>24</sup> Show me a denarius. Whose image and inscription are on it?”

They answered, “Caesar’s.”

<sup>25</sup> He said to them, “Then give to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.”

<sup>26</sup> They weren’t able to trap him in his words before the people. They marvelled at his answer and were silent. <sup>27</sup> Some of the Sadducees came to him, those who deny that there is a resurrection. <sup>28</sup> They asked him, “Teacher, Moses wrote to us that if a man’s brother dies having a wife, and he is childless, his brother should take the wife and raise up children for his brother. <sup>29</sup> There were therefore seven brothers. The first took a wife, and died childless. <sup>30</sup> The second took

her as wife, and he died childless. <sup>31</sup> The third took her, and likewise the seven all left no children, and died. <sup>32</sup> Afterward the woman also died. <sup>33</sup> Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them will she be? For the seven had her as a wife.”

<sup>34</sup> Jesus said to them, “The children of this age marry, and are given in marriage. <sup>35</sup> But those who are considered worthy to attain to that age and the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. <sup>36</sup> For they can’t die any more, for they are like the angels, and are children of God, being children of the resurrection. <sup>37</sup> But that the dead are raised, even Moses showed at the bush, when he called the Lord ‘The God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’ Exodus 3:6 <sup>38</sup> Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for all are alive to him.”

<sup>39</sup> Some of the scribes answered, “Teacher, you speak well.” <sup>40</sup> They didn’t dare to ask him any more questions.

<sup>41</sup> He said to them, “Why do they say that the Christ is David’s son? <sup>42</sup> David himself says in the book of Psalms,

‘The Lord said to my Lord,

“Sit at my right hand,

<sup>43</sup> until I make your enemies the footstool of your feet.”

<sup>44</sup> “David therefore calls him Lord, so how is he his son?”

<sup>45</sup> In the hearing of all the people, he said to his disciples, <sup>46</sup> “Beware of those scribes who like to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the marketplaces, the best seats in the synagogues, and the best places at feasts; <sup>47</sup> who devour widows’ houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these will receive greater condemnation.”

**21** He looked up and saw the rich people who were putting their gifts into the treasury. <sup>2</sup> He saw a certain poor widow casting in two small brass coins. <sup>3</sup> He said, “Truly I tell you, this poor widow put in more than all of them, <sup>4</sup> for all these put in gifts for God from their



abundance, but she, out of her poverty, put in all that she had to live on.”

<sup>5</sup> As some were talking about the temple and how it was decorated with beautiful stones and gifts, he said, <sup>6</sup> “As for these things which you see, the days will come, in which there will not be left here one stone on another that will not be thrown down.”

<sup>7</sup> They asked him, “Teacher, so when will these things be? What is the sign that these things are about to happen?”

<sup>8</sup> He said, “Watch out that you don’t get led astray, for many will come in my name, saying, ‘I am he,’ and, ‘The time is at hand.’ Therefore don’t follow them. <sup>9</sup> When you hear of wars and disturbances, don’t be terrified, for these things must happen first, but the end won’t come immediately.”

<sup>10</sup> Then he said to them, “Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. <sup>11</sup> There will be great earthquakes, famines, and plagues in various places. There will be terrors and great signs from heaven. <sup>12</sup> But before all these things, they will lay their hands on you and will persecute you, delivering you up to synagogues and prisons, bringing you before kings and governors for my name’s sake. <sup>13</sup> It will turn out as a testimony for you. <sup>14</sup> Settle it therefore in your hearts not to meditate beforehand how to answer, <sup>15</sup> for I will give you a mouth and wisdom which all your adversaries will not be able to withstand or to contradict. <sup>16</sup> You will be handed over even by parents, brothers, relatives, and friends. They will cause some of you to be put to death. <sup>17</sup> You will be hated by all men for my name’s sake. <sup>18</sup> And not a hair of your head will perish.

<sup>19</sup> “By your endurance you will win your lives.

<sup>20</sup> “But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then know that its desolation is at hand. <sup>21</sup> Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let those who are in the middle of her depart. Let those who are in the country not enter therein. <sup>22</sup> For these are days

of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. <sup>23</sup> Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who nurse infants in those days! For there will be great distress in the land, and wrath to this people. <sup>24</sup> They will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations. Jerusalem will be trampled down by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. <sup>25</sup> There will be signs in the sun, moon, and stars; and on the earth anxiety of nations, in perplexity for the roaring of the sea and the waves; <sup>26</sup> men fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things which are coming on the world: for the powers of the heavens will be shaken. <sup>27</sup> Then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. <sup>28</sup> But when these things begin to happen, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is near.”

<sup>29</sup> He told them a parable. “See the fig tree and all the trees. <sup>30</sup> When they are already budding, you see it and know by your own selves that the summer is already near. <sup>31</sup> Even so you also, when you see these things happening, know that God’s Kingdom is near. <sup>32</sup> Most certainly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all things are accomplished. <sup>33</sup> Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will by no means pass away.

<sup>34</sup> “So be careful, or your hearts will be loaded down with carousing, drunkenness, and cares of this life, and that day will come on you suddenly. <sup>35</sup> For it will come like a snare on all those who dwell on the surface of all the earth. <sup>36</sup> Therefore be watchful all the time, praying that you may be counted worthy to escape all these things that will happen, and to stand before the Son of Man.”

<sup>37</sup> Every day Jesus was teaching in the temple, and every night he would go out and spend the night on the mountain that is called Olivet. <sup>38</sup> All the people came early in the morning to him in the temple to hear him.

**22** Now the feast of unleavened bread, which is called the Passover, was approaching. <sup>2</sup> The chief priests and the scribes sought how they might put him to death, for they feared the people. <sup>3</sup> Satan entered

into Judas, who was also called Iscariot, who was counted with the twelve. <sup>4</sup>He went away, and talked with the chief priests and captains about how he might deliver him to them. <sup>5</sup>They were glad, and agreed to give him money. <sup>6</sup>He consented, and sought an opportunity to deliver him to them in the absence of the multitude. <sup>7</sup>The day of unleavened bread came, on which the Passover must be sacrificed. <sup>8</sup>Jesus sent Peter and John, saying, “Go and prepare the Passover for us, that we may eat.”

<sup>9</sup> They said to him, “Where do you want us to prepare?”

<sup>10</sup> He said to them, “Behold, when you have entered into the city, a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you. Follow him into the house which he enters. <sup>11</sup> Tell the master of the house, ‘The Teacher says to you, “Where is the guest room, where I may eat the Passover with my disciples?”’ <sup>12</sup> He will show you a large, furnished upper room. Make preparations there.”

<sup>13</sup> They went, found things as Jesus had told them, and they prepared the Passover. <sup>14</sup> When the hour had come, he sat down with the twelve apostles. <sup>15</sup> He said to them, “I have earnestly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer, <sup>16</sup> for I tell you, I will no longer by any means eat of it until it is fulfilled in God’s Kingdom.” <sup>17</sup> He received a cup, and when he had given thanks, he said, “Take this, and share it among yourselves, <sup>18</sup> for I tell you, I will not drink at all again from the fruit of the vine, until God’s Kingdom comes.”

<sup>19</sup> He took bread, and when he had given thanks, he broke, and gave it to them, saying, “This is my body which is given for you. Do this in memory of me.” <sup>20</sup> Likewise, he took the cup after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is poured out for you. <sup>21</sup> But behold, the hand of him who betrays me is with me on the table. <sup>22</sup> The Son of Man indeed goes, as it has been determined, but woe to that man through whom he is betrayed!”

<sup>23</sup> They began to question among themselves, which of them it was who would do this thing. <sup>24</sup> A dispute also arose among them, which

of them was considered to be greatest. <sup>25</sup> He said to them, “The kings of the nations lord it over them, and those who have authority over them are called ‘benefactors.’ <sup>26</sup> But not so with you. But one who is the greater among you, let him become as the younger, and one who is governing, as one who serves. <sup>27</sup> For who is greater, one who sits at the table, or one who serves? Isn’t it he who sits at the table? But I am among you as one who serves. <sup>28</sup> But you are those who have continued with me in my trials. <sup>29</sup> I confer on you a kingdom, even as my Father conferred on me, <sup>30</sup> that you may eat and drink at my table in my Kingdom. You will sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.”

<sup>31</sup> The Lord said, “Simon, Simon, behold, Satan asked to have all of you, that he might sift you as wheat, <sup>32</sup> but I prayed for you, that your faith wouldn’t fail. You, when once you have turned again, establish your brothers.”

<sup>33</sup> He said to him, “Lord, I am ready to go with you both to prison and to death!”

<sup>34</sup> He said, “I tell you, Peter, the rooster will by no means crow today until you deny that you know me three times.”

<sup>35</sup> He said to them, “When I sent you out without purse, wallet, and sandals, did you lack anything?”

They said, “Nothing.”

<sup>36</sup> Then he said to them, “But now, whoever has a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet. Whoever has none, let him sell his cloak, and buy a sword. <sup>37</sup> For I tell you that this which is written must still be fulfilled in me: ‘He was counted with transgressors.’ For that which concerns me has an end.”

<sup>38</sup> They said, “Lord, behold, here are two swords.”

He said to them, “That is enough.”

<sup>39</sup> He came out and went, as his custom was, to the Mount of Olives. His disciples also followed him. <sup>40</sup> When he was at the place, he said to them, “**Pray that you don’t enter into temptation.**”

<sup>41</sup> He was withdrawn from them about a stone’s throw, and he knelt down and prayed, <sup>42</sup> saying, “**Father, if you are willing, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, not my will, but yours, be done.**”

<sup>43</sup> An angel from heaven appeared to him, strengthening him. <sup>44</sup> Being in agony he prayed more earnestly. His sweat became like great drops of blood falling down on the ground.

<sup>45</sup> When he rose up from his prayer, he came to the disciples, and found them sleeping because of grief, <sup>46</sup> and said to them, “**Why do you sleep? Rise and pray that you may not enter into temptation.**”

<sup>47</sup> While he was still speaking, a crowd appeared. He who was called Judas, one of the twelve, was leading them. He came near to Jesus to kiss him. <sup>48</sup> But Jesus said to him, “**Judas, do you betray the Son of Man with a kiss?**”

<sup>49</sup> When those who were around him saw what was about to happen, they said to him, “Lord, shall we strike with the sword?” <sup>50</sup> A certain one of them struck the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

<sup>51</sup> But Jesus answered, “**Let me at least do this**”—and he touched his ear, and healed him. <sup>52</sup> Jesus said to the chief priests, captains of the temple, and elders, who had come against him, “**Have you come out as against a robber, with swords and clubs? <sup>53</sup> When I was with you in the temple daily, you didn’t stretch out your hands against me. But this is your hour, and the power of darkness.**”

<sup>54</sup> They seized him, and led him away, and brought him into the high priest’s house. But Peter followed from a distance. <sup>55</sup> When they had kindled a fire in the middle of the courtyard, and had sat down together, Peter sat among them. <sup>56</sup> A certain servant girl saw him as

he sat in the light, and looking intently at him, said, “This man also was with him.”

<sup>57</sup> He denied Jesus, saying, “Woman, I don’t know him.”

<sup>58</sup> After a little while someone else saw him, and said, “You also are one of them!”

But Peter answered, “Man, I am not!”

<sup>59</sup> After about one hour passed, another confidently affirmed, saying, “Truly this man also was with him, for he is a Galilean!”

<sup>60</sup> But Peter said, “Man, I don’t know what you are talking about!” Immediately, while he was still speaking, a rooster crowed. <sup>61</sup> The Lord turned and looked at Peter. Then Peter remembered the Lord’s word, how he said to him, “**Before the rooster crows you will deny me three times.**” <sup>62</sup> He went out, and wept bitterly.

<sup>63</sup> The men who held Jesus mocked him and beat him. <sup>64</sup> Having blindfolded him, they struck him on the face and asked him, “Prophecy! Who is the one who struck you?” <sup>65</sup> They spoke many other things against him, insulting him.

<sup>66</sup> As soon as it was day, the assembly of the elders of the people were gathered together, both chief priests and scribes, and they led him away into their council, saying, <sup>67</sup> “If you are the Christ, tell us.”

But he said to them, “**If I tell you, you won’t believe, <sup>68</sup> and if I ask, you will in no way answer me or let me go. <sup>69</sup> From now on, the Son of Man will be seated at the right hand of the power of God.**”

<sup>70</sup> They all said, “Are you then the Son of God?”

He said to them, “**You say it, because I am.**”

<sup>71</sup> They said, “Why do we need any more witness? For we ourselves have heard from his own mouth!”

**23** The whole company of them rose up and brought him before Pilate. <sup>2</sup> They began to accuse him, saying, “We found this man perverting the nation, forbidding paying taxes to Caesar, and saying that he himself is Christ, a king.”

<sup>3</sup> Pilate asked him, “Are you the King of the Jews?”

He answered him, “**So you say.**”

<sup>4</sup> Pilate said to the chief priests and the multitudes, “I find no basis for a charge against this man.”

<sup>5</sup> But they insisted, saying, “He stirs up the people, teaching throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee even to this place.” <sup>6</sup> But when Pilate heard Galilee mentioned, he asked if the man was a Galilean. <sup>7</sup> When he found out that he was in Herod’s jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who was also in Jerusalem during those days.

<sup>8</sup> Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly glad, for he had wanted to see him for a long time, because he had heard many things about him. He hoped to see some miracle done by him. <sup>9</sup> He questioned him with many words, but he gave no answers. <sup>10</sup> The chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. <sup>11</sup> Herod with his soldiers humiliated him and mocked him. Dressing him in luxurious clothing, they sent him back to Pilate. <sup>12</sup> Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day, for before that they were enemies with each other.

<sup>13</sup> Pilate called together the chief priests, the rulers, and the people, <sup>14</sup> and said to them, “You brought this man to me as one that perverts the people, and behold, having examined him before you, I found no basis for a charge against this man concerning those things of which you accuse him. <sup>15</sup> Neither has Herod, for I sent you to him, and see, nothing worthy of death has been done by him. <sup>16</sup> I will therefore chastise him and release him.”

<sup>17</sup> Now he had to release one prisoner to them at the feast. <sup>18</sup> But they all cried out together, saying, “Away with this man! Release to us Barabbas!”— <sup>19</sup> one who was thrown into prison for a certain revolt in the city, and for murder.

<sup>20</sup> Then Pilate spoke to them again, wanting to release Jesus, <sup>21</sup> but they shouted, saying, “Crucify! Crucify him!”

<sup>22</sup> He said to them the third time, “Why? What evil has this man done? I have found no capital crime in him. I will therefore chastise him and release him.” <sup>23</sup> But they were urgent with loud voices, asking that he might be crucified. Their voices and the voices of the chief priests prevailed. <sup>24</sup> Pilate decreed that what they asked for should be done. <sup>25</sup> He released him who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder, for whom they asked, but he delivered Jesus up to their will.

<sup>26</sup> When they led him away, they grabbed one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, and laid on him the cross, to carry it after Jesus. <sup>27</sup> A great multitude of the people followed him, including women who also mourned and lamented him. <sup>28</sup> But Jesus, turning to them, said, “Daughters of Jerusalem, don’t weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. <sup>29</sup> For behold, the days are coming in which they will say, ‘Blessed are the barren, the wombs that never bore, and the breasts that never nursed.’ <sup>30</sup> Then they will begin to tell the mountains, ‘Fall on us!’ and tell the hills, ‘Cover us.’ <sup>31</sup> For if they do these things in the green tree, what will be done in the dry?”

<sup>32</sup> There were also others, two criminals, led with him to be put to death. <sup>33</sup> When they came to the place that is called “The Skull”, they crucified him there with the criminals, one on the right and the other on the left.

<sup>34</sup> Jesus said, “Father, forgive them, for they don’t know what they are doing.”



Dividing his garments among them, they cast lots. <sup>35</sup> The people stood watching. The rulers with them also scoffed at him, saying, “He saved others. Let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen one!”

<sup>36</sup> The soldiers also mocked him, coming to him and offering him vinegar, <sup>37</sup> and saying, “If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself!”

<sup>38</sup> An inscription was also written over him in letters of Greek, Latin, and Hebrew: “THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.”

<sup>39</sup> One of the criminals who was hanged insulted him, saying, “If you are the Christ, save yourself and us!”

<sup>40</sup> But the other answered, and rebuking him said, “Don’t you even fear God, seeing you are under the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup> And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward for our deeds, but this man has done nothing wrong.” <sup>42</sup> He said to Jesus, “Lord, remember me when you come into your Kingdom.”

<sup>43</sup> Jesus said to him, “Assuredly I tell you, today you will be with me in Paradise.”

<sup>44</sup> It was now about the sixth hour, and darkness came over the whole land until the ninth hour. <sup>45</sup> The sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was torn in two. <sup>46</sup> Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said, “Father, into your hands I commit my spirit!” Having said this, he breathed his last.

<sup>47</sup> When the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, “Certainly this was a righteous man.” <sup>48</sup> All the multitudes that came together to see this, when they saw the things that were done, returned home beating their breasts. <sup>49</sup> All his acquaintances and the women who followed with him from Galilee stood at a distance, watching these things.

<sup>50</sup> Behold, a man named Joseph, who was a member of the council, a good and righteous man <sup>51</sup> (he had not consented to their counsel and deed), from Arimathaea, a city of the Jews, who was also waiting for God's Kingdom: <sup>52</sup> this man went to Pilate, and asked for Jesus' body. <sup>53</sup> He took it down, and wrapped it in a linen cloth, and laid him in a tomb that was cut in stone, where no one had ever been laid. <sup>54</sup> It was the day of the Preparation, and the Sabbath was drawing near. <sup>55</sup> The women, who had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and saw the tomb, and how his body was laid. <sup>56</sup> They returned and prepared spices and ointments. On the Sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

**24** But on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they and some others came to the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared. <sup>2</sup> They found the stone rolled away from the tomb. <sup>3</sup> They entered in, and didn't find the Lord Jesus' body. <sup>4</sup> While they were greatly perplexed about this, behold, two men stood by them in dazzling clothing. <sup>5</sup> Becoming terrified, they bowed their faces down to the earth.

They said to them, "Why do you seek the living among the dead? <sup>6</sup> He isn't here, but is risen. Remember what he told you when he was still in Galilee, <sup>7</sup> saying that **the Son of Man must be delivered up into the hands of sinful men and be crucified, and the third day rise again?**"

<sup>8</sup> They remembered his words, <sup>9</sup> returned from the tomb, and told all these things to the eleven and to all the rest. <sup>10</sup> Now they were Mary Magdalene, Joanna, and Mary the mother of James. The other women with them told these things to the apostles. <sup>11</sup> These words seemed to them to be nonsense, and they didn't believe them. <sup>12</sup> But Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping and looking in, he saw the strips of linen lying by themselves, and he departed to his home, wondering what had happened.

<sup>13</sup> Behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was sixty stadia from Jerusalem. <sup>14</sup> They talked with each other about all of these things which had

happened. <sup>15</sup> While they talked and questioned together, Jesus himself came near, and went with them. <sup>16</sup> But their eyes were kept from recognizing him. <sup>17</sup> He said to them, “What are you talking about as you walk, and are sad?”

<sup>18</sup> One of them, named Cleopas, answered him, “Are you the only stranger in Jerusalem who doesn’t know the things which have happened there in these days?”

<sup>19</sup> He said to them, “What things?”

They said to him, “The things concerning Jesus, the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; <sup>20</sup> and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him. <sup>21</sup> But we were hoping that it was he who would redeem Israel. Yes, and besides all this, it is now the third day since these things happened. <sup>22</sup> Also, certain women of our company amazed us, having arrived early at the tomb; <sup>23</sup> and when they didn’t find his body, they came saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. <sup>24</sup> Some of us went to the tomb, and found it just like the women had said, but they didn’t see him.”

<sup>25</sup> He said to them, “Foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! <sup>26</sup> Didn’t the Christ have to suffer these things and to enter into his glory?” <sup>27</sup> Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he explained to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself. <sup>28</sup> They came near to the village where they were going, and he acted like he would go further.

<sup>29</sup> They urged him, saying, “Stay with us, for it is almost evening, and the day is almost over.”

He went in to stay with them. <sup>30</sup> When he had sat down at the table with them, he took the bread and gave thanks. Breaking it, he gave it to them. <sup>31</sup> Their eyes were opened and they recognized him, then he vanished out of their sight. <sup>32</sup> They said to one another, “Weren’t our hearts burning within us, while he spoke to us along the way,

and while he opened the Scriptures to us?” <sup>33</sup> They rose up that very hour, returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and those who were with them, <sup>34</sup> saying, “The Lord is risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon!” <sup>35</sup> They related the things that happened along the way, and how he was recognized by them in the breaking of the bread.

<sup>36</sup> As they said these things, Jesus himself stood among them, and said to them, “Peace be to you.”

<sup>37</sup> But they were terrified and filled with fear, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

<sup>38</sup> He said to them, “Why are you troubled? Why do doubts arise in your hearts? <sup>39</sup> See my hands and my feet, that it is truly me. Touch me and see, for a spirit doesn’t have flesh and bones, as you see that I have.” <sup>40</sup> When he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet. <sup>41</sup> While they still didn’t believe for joy, and wondered, he said to them, “Do you have anything here to eat?”

<sup>42</sup> They gave him a piece of a broiled fish and some honeycomb. <sup>43</sup> He took them, and ate in front of them. <sup>44</sup> He said to them, “This is what I told you, while I was still with you, that all things which are written in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me must be fulfilled.”

<sup>45</sup> Then he opened their minds, that they might understand the Scriptures. <sup>46</sup> He said to them, “Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day, <sup>47</sup> and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name to all the nations, beginning at Jerusalem. <sup>48</sup> You are witnesses of these things. <sup>49</sup> Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high.”

<sup>50</sup> He led them out as far as Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. <sup>51</sup> While he blessed them, he withdrew from them, and was carried up into heaven. <sup>52</sup> They worshipped him, and returned

to Jerusalem with great joy, <sup>53</sup> and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

End of the Gospel of Luke.

## 6. THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD

Prophecies of God # 47-60.

The Holy Spirit of God, revealed in Acts of The Apostles.

In the Bible, an apostle was a messenger of God, who was called by God to deliver the good news (the gospel) of Jesus Christ.

Acts of The Apostles, is one of the books of the Bible and is the second book by Luke. His first book – The Gospel of Luke, was a letter to his good friend called Theophilus. His second book – Acts of The Apostles (known as Acts), is his second letter to Theophilus. Here Luke is continuing the events that happened following Jesus Christ's crucifixion, death, being raised to life again and ascension into heaven.

This letter tells his friend about the power of God working through the Holy Spirit of God in and through the lives of the followers of Jesus Christ. As you read this chapter, as well as discovering how the Christian church began 2,000 years ago. The exciting thing for us is that those miracles that happened 2,000 years ago are still happening today in and through the lives of those who follow Jesus Christ.

In the Gospel of Luke, we read of how Jesus Christ was the fulfilment of the prophecies of God. Prophecies were declared by God hundreds and thousands of years before the birth of Jesus Christ. Even though he prepared his disciples for his death by crucifixion, and offered words of comfort that he would rise again from the dead on the third day. They were so stricken with grief they found it difficult to believe he had risen from the dead. They thought they were seeing a ghost – until Jesus proved himself alive and reminded them of the prophecies of God fulfilled in his birth, life, ministry, death and resurrection.

Jesus would have reminded them of the following prophecies from God.

### **(Prophecy # 47.)**

The promise of God to pour out His Spirit on all people.

<sup>28</sup> *“It will happen afterward, that I will pour out my Spirit on all*

*flesh; and your sons and your daughters will prophesy. Your old men will dream dreams. Your young men will see visions.* <sup>29</sup> *And also on the servants and on the handmaids in those days, I will pour out my Spirit.* Joel 2:28-32. (c. 800 BC). Spoken of in Luke 24:49, and fulfilled in Acts 2:14:21.

Then Jesus tells them this prophecy is about to be fulfilled in them as they wait in Jerusalem.

**(Prophecy # 48.)**

<sup>49</sup> *Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high.*” Luke 24:49. (c. 30 AD).

Some years later, Luke wrote again to his friend Theophilus, confirming that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and that the prophecies and promises of God continued in the lives of his disciples. This letter to Theophilus which is known as Acts of the Apostles, and commonly known as Acts, tells of the birth of the Christian church and the supernatural power of God. The same supernatural power of God that is available to Christians today, in the power of the Holy Spirit and in the name of Jesus Christ

Just before we look at Acts, here are some of the prophecies of God recorded in the Old Testament some 400-1,400 years before the birth of Jesus Christ and fulfilled in Acts.

**(Prophecy # 49.)**

Acts 1:20. *Let another take his office.*

*Let his days be few.*

*Let another take his office.* Psalm 109:8. (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 50.)**

Acts 2:25:28. *Death could not hold him.*

Therefore my heart is glad, and my tongue rejoices.

My body shall also dwell in safety.

<sup>10</sup> For you will not leave my soul in Sheol,

neither will you allow your holy one to see corruption. Psalm 16:9-10 (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 51.)**

Acts 2:34-35. *Sit at my right hand. Yahweh says to my Lord, "Sit at my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool for your feet."* Psalm 110:1. (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 52.)**

Acts 3:22-23. *One like Moses.*

<sup>15</sup> *Yahweh your God will raise up to you a prophet from among you, of your brothers, like me. You shall listen to him.* Deuteronomy 18:15. (c. 1,400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 53.)**

Acts 3:25. *All families of the earth blessed.*

<sup>3</sup> *I will bless those who bless you, and I will curse him who treats you with contempt. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you."* Genesis 12:3 (c. 1,400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 54.)**

Acts 4:11. *The stone the builders rejected.*

*The stone which the builders rejected has become the cornerstone.* Psalm 118:22. (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 55.)**

Acts 4:25-26. *Against the Lord and Christ.*

**2** *Why do the nations rage, and the peoples plot a vain thing?*

<sup>2</sup> *The kings of the earth take a stand, and the rulers take counsel together, against Yahweh, and against his Anointed* Psalm 2:1-2. (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 56.)**

Acts 7:3. *Come to the land I will show you.*

**12** *Now Yahweh said to Abram, "Leave your country, and your relatives, and your father's house, and go to the land that I will show you.* Genesis 12:1. (c. 1,400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 57.)**

Acts 8:32-33. *Led as a lamb to the slaughter.*

<sup>7</sup> *He was oppressed, yet when he was afflicted he didn't open his mouth.*



*As a lamb that is led to the slaughter,  
and as a sheep that before its shearers is silent,  
so he didn't open his mouth. Isaiah 53:7. (c. 700 BC).*

**(Prophecy # 58.)**

Acts 13:33. *You are my son.*

<sup>7</sup> *I will tell of the decree:*

*Yahweh said to me, "You are my son.*

*Today I have become your father.*

Psalm 2:7. (c. 400 BC).

**(Prophecy # 59.)**

Acts 13:47. *They will not believe.*

<sup>5</sup> *"Look among the nations, watch, and wonder marvellously; for I am working a work in your days, which you will not believe though it is told you. Habakkuk 1:5. (c. 600 BC).*

**(Prophecy # 60.)**

Acts 13:47. *A light to the Gentiles.*

*I will also give you as a light to the nations,  
that you may be my salvation to the end of the earth.*

Isaiah 49:6. (c. 700 BC).

In the Gospel of Luke chapter 6:12-16, Jesus selects twelve of his disciples to be apostles. The Greek word for Apostle means to be sent. So, Jesus chose twelve of his followers to be sent out into the world to proclaim the good news of the Gospel of Jesus Christ and the Kingdom of God. Jesus also sent them out in the power and presence of God, and in the Acts of The Apostles, you will read of the power and presence of God at work in their lives.

**Acts of The Apostles.** World English Bible (WEB).

**1** The first book I wrote, Theophilus, concerned all that Jesus began both to do and to teach, <sup>2</sup> until the day in which he was received up, after he had given commandment through the Holy Spirit to the apostles whom he had chosen. <sup>3</sup> To these he also showed himself alive after he suffered, by many proofs, appearing to them over a period of forty days, and speaking about God's Kingdom. <sup>4</sup> Being assembled together with them, he commanded them, **"Don't depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the**

Father, which you heard from me. <sup>5</sup> For John indeed baptized in water, but you will be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many days from now.”

<sup>6</sup> Therefore when they had come together, they asked him, “Lord, are you now restoring the kingdom to Israel?”

<sup>7</sup> He said to them, “It isn’t for you to know times or seasons which the Father has set within his own authority. <sup>8</sup> But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you. You will be witnesses to me in Jerusalem, in all Judea and Samaria, and to the uttermost parts of the earth.”

<sup>9</sup> When he had said these things, as they were looking, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight. <sup>10</sup> While they were looking steadfastly into the sky as he went, behold, two men stood by them in white clothing, <sup>11</sup> who also said, “You men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus, who was received up from you into the sky, will come back in the same way as you saw him going into the sky.”

<sup>12</sup> Then they returned to Jerusalem from the mountain called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a Sabbath day’s journey away. <sup>13</sup> When they had come in, they went up into the upper room where they were staying; that is Peter, John, James, Andrew, Philip, Thomas, Bartholomew, Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son of James. <sup>14</sup> All these with one accord continued steadfastly in prayer and supplication, along with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers.

<sup>15</sup> In these days, Peter stood up in the middle of the disciples (and the number of names was about one hundred twenty), and said, <sup>16</sup> “Brothers, it was necessary that this Scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit spoke before by the mouth of David concerning Judas, who was guide to those who took Jesus. <sup>17</sup> For he was counted with us, and received his portion in this ministry. <sup>18</sup> Now this man obtained a field with the reward for his wickedness, and falling headlong, his body burst open, and all his intestines gushed out. <sup>19</sup> It became known to everyone who lived in Jerusalem that in their language that field was called ‘Akeldama,’ that is, ‘The field of blood.’ <sup>20</sup> For it is written in the book of Psalms,

‘Let his habitation be made desolate.

Let no one dwell in it;’

and,

‘Let another take his office.’

<sup>21</sup> “Of the men therefore who have accompanied us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, <sup>22</sup>beginning from the baptism of John, to the day that he was received up from us, of these, one must become a witness with us of his resurrection.”

<sup>23</sup> They put forward two, Joseph called Barsabbas, who was also called Justus, and Matthias. <sup>24</sup> They prayed and said, “You, Lord, who know the hearts of all men, show which one of these two you have chosen <sup>25</sup>to take part in this ministry and apostleship from which Judas fell away, that he might go to his own place.” <sup>26</sup> They drew lots for them, and the lot fell on Matthias, and he was counted with the eleven apostles.

**2** Now when the day of Pentecost had come, they were all with one accord in one place. <sup>2</sup> Suddenly there came from the sky a sound like the rushing of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. <sup>3</sup> Tongues like fire appeared and were distributed to them, and one sat on each of them. <sup>4</sup> They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other languages, as the Spirit gave them the ability to speak. <sup>5</sup> Now there were dwelling in Jerusalem Jews, devout men, from every nation under the sky. <sup>6</sup> When this sound was heard, the multitude came together and were bewildered, because everyone heard them speaking in his own language. <sup>7</sup> They were all amazed and marvelled, saying to one another, “Behold, aren’t all these who speak Galileans?” <sup>8</sup> How do we hear, everyone in our own native language? <sup>9</sup> Parthians, Medes, Elamites, and people from Mesopotamia, Judea, Cappadocia, Pontus, Asia, <sup>10</sup> Phrygia, Pamphylia, Egypt, the parts of Libya around Cyrene, visitors from Rome, both Jews and proselytes, <sup>11</sup> Cretans and Arabians: we hear them speaking in our languages the mighty works of God!” <sup>12</sup> They were all amazed, and were perplexed, saying to one another, “What does this mean?” <sup>13</sup> Others, mocking, said, “They are filled with new wine.”

<sup>14</sup> But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice and spoke out to them, “You men of Judea, and all you who dwell at Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and listen to my words. <sup>15</sup> For these aren’t drunken, as you suppose, seeing it is only the third hour of the day. <sup>16</sup> But this is what has been spoken through the prophet Joel:

- <sup>17</sup> ‘It will be in the last days, says God,  
that I will pour out my Spirit on all flesh.  
Your sons and your daughters will prophesy.  
Your young men will see visions.  
Your old men will dream dreams.  
<sup>18</sup> Yes, and on my servants and on my handmaidens in those days,  
I will pour out my Spirit, and they will prophesy.  
<sup>19</sup> I will show wonders in the sky above,  
and signs on the earth beneath:  
blood, and fire, and billows of smoke.  
<sup>20</sup> The sun will be turned into darkness,  
and the moon into blood,  
before the great and glorious day of the Lord comes.  
<sup>21</sup> It will be that whoever will call on the name of the Lord will be saved.’

<sup>22</sup> “Men of Israel, hear these words! Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved by God to you by mighty works and wonders and signs which God did by him among you, even as you yourselves know, <sup>23</sup> him, being delivered up by the determined counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken by the hand of lawless men, crucified and killed; <sup>24</sup> whom God raised up, having freed him from the agony of death, because it was not possible that he should be held by it. <sup>25</sup> For David says concerning him,

- ‘I saw the Lord always before my face,  
for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.  
<sup>26</sup> Therefore my heart was glad, and my tongue rejoiced.  
Moreover my flesh also will dwell in hope;  
<sup>27</sup> because you will not leave my soul in Hades,  
neither will you allow your Holy One to see decay.  
<sup>28</sup> You made known to me the ways of life.  
You will make me full of gladness with your presence.’

<sup>29</sup> “Brothers, I may tell you freely of the patriarch David, that he both died and was buried, and his tomb is with us to this day. <sup>30</sup> Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him that of the fruit of his body, according to the flesh, he would raise up the Christ to sit on his throne, <sup>31</sup> he foreseeing this spoke about the resurrection of the Christ, that his soul wasn’t left in Hades, and his flesh didn’t see decay. <sup>32</sup> This Jesus God raised up, to which we all are witnesses. <sup>33</sup> Being therefore exalted by the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he has poured out this, which you now see and hear. <sup>34</sup> For David didn’t ascend into the heavens, but he says

himself,

‘The Lord said to my Lord, “Sit by my right hand  
<sup>35</sup> until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.”’

<sup>36</sup> “Let all the house of Israel therefore know certainly that God has made him both Lord and Christ, this Jesus whom you crucified.”

<sup>37</sup> Now when they heard this, they were cut to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, “Brothers, what shall we do?”

<sup>38</sup> Peter said to them, “Repent, and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of sins, and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. <sup>39</sup> For the promise is to you, and to your children, and to all who are far off, even as many as the Lord our God will call to himself.” <sup>40</sup> With many other words he testified, and exhorted them, saying, “Save yourselves from this crooked generation!”

<sup>41</sup> Then those who gladly received his word were baptized. There were added that day about three thousand souls. <sup>42</sup> They continued steadfastly in the apostles’ teaching and fellowship, in the breaking of bread, and prayer. <sup>43</sup> Fear came on every soul, and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles. <sup>44</sup> All who believed were together, and had all things in common. <sup>45</sup> They sold their possessions and goods, and distributed them to all, according as anyone had need. <sup>46</sup> Day by day, continuing steadfastly with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread at home, they took their food with gladness and singleness of heart, <sup>47</sup> praising God, and having favour with all the people. The Lord added to the assembly day by day those who were being saved.

**3** Peter and John were going up into the temple at the hour of prayer, the ninth hour. <sup>2</sup> A certain man who was lame from his mother’s womb was being carried, whom they laid daily at the door of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask gifts for the needy of those who entered into the temple. <sup>3</sup> Seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, he asked to receive gifts for the needy. <sup>4</sup> Peter, fastening his eyes on him, with John, said, “Look at us.” <sup>5</sup> He listened to them, expecting to receive something from them. <sup>6</sup> But Peter said, “I have no silver or gold, but what I have, that I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, get up and walk!” <sup>7</sup> He took him by the right hand and raised him up. Immediately his feet and his ankle bones received strength. <sup>8</sup> Leaping up, he stood and began to walk.

He entered with them into the temple, walking, leaping, and praising God.<sup>9</sup> All the people saw him walking and praising God.<sup>10</sup> They recognized him, that it was he who used to sit begging for gifts for the needy at the Beautiful Gate of the temple. They were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened to him.<sup>11</sup> As the lame man who was healed held on to Peter and John, all the people ran together to them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

<sup>12</sup> When Peter saw it, he responded to the people, "You men of Israel, why do you marvel at this man? Why do you fasten your eyes on us, as though by our own power or godliness we had made him walk?" <sup>13</sup> The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his Servant Jesus, whom you delivered up, and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had determined to release him.<sup>14</sup> But you denied the Holy and Righteous One and asked for a murderer to be granted to you,<sup>15</sup> and killed the Prince of life, whom God raised from the dead, to which we are witnesses.<sup>16</sup> By faith in his name, his name has made this man strong, whom you see and know. Yes, the faith which is through him has given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

<sup>17</sup> "Now, brothers, I know that you did this in ignorance, as did also your rulers.<sup>18</sup> But the things which God announced by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he thus fulfilled.

<sup>19</sup> "Repent therefore, and turn again, that your sins may be blotted out, so that there may come times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord,<sup>20</sup> and that he may send Christ Jesus, who was ordained for you before,<sup>21</sup> whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, which God spoke long ago by the mouth of his holy prophets.<sup>22</sup> For Moses indeed said to the fathers, 'The Lord God will raise up a prophet for you from among your brothers, like me. You shall listen to him in all things whatever he says to you.'<sup>23</sup> It will be that every soul that will not listen to that prophet will be utterly destroyed from among the people.' Deuteronomy 18:15,18-19 <sup>24</sup> Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel and those who followed after, as many as have spoken, they also told of these days.<sup>25</sup> You are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, 'All the families of the earth will be blessed through your offspring.'<sup>26</sup> God, having raised up his servant Jesus, sent him to you first to bless you, in turning away every one of you from your wickedness."

**4** As they spoke to the people, the priests and the captain of the temple and

the Sadducees came to them, <sup>2</sup>being upset because they taught the people and proclaimed in Jesus the resurrection from the dead. <sup>3</sup>They laid hands on them, and put them in custody until the next day, for it was now evening. <sup>4</sup>But many of those who heard the word believed, and the number of the men came to be about five thousand.

<sup>5</sup>In the morning, their rulers, elders, and scribes were gathered together in Jerusalem. <sup>6</sup>Annas the high priest was there, with Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and as many as were relatives of the high priest. <sup>7</sup>When they had stood Peter and John in the middle of them, they inquired, “By what power, or in what name, have you done this?”

<sup>8</sup>Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, “You rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, <sup>9</sup>if we are examined today concerning a good deed done to a crippled man, by what means this man has been healed, <sup>10</sup>may it be known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, this man stands here before you whole in him. <sup>11</sup>He is ‘the stone which was regarded as worthless by you, the builders, which has become the head of the corner. <sup>12</sup>[Psalm 118:22](#) <sup>12</sup>There is salvation in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven that is given among men, by which we must be saved!”

<sup>13</sup>Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and had perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled. They recognized that they had been with Jesus. <sup>14</sup>Seeing the man who was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it. <sup>15</sup>But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves, <sup>16</sup>saying, “What shall we do to these men? Because indeed a notable miracle has been done through them, as can be plainly seen by all who dwell in Jerusalem, and we can’t deny it. <sup>17</sup>But so that this spreads no further among the people, let’s threaten them, that from now on they don’t speak to anyone in this name.” <sup>18</sup>They called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.

<sup>19</sup>But Peter and John answered them, “Whether it is right in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves, <sup>20</sup>for we can’t help telling the things which we saw and heard.”

<sup>21</sup>When they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding no way to punish them, because of the people; for everyone glorified God for that which was done. <sup>22</sup>For the man on whom this miracle of healing was

performed was more than forty years old.

<sup>23</sup> Being let go, they came to their own company and reported all that the chief priests and the elders had said to them. <sup>24</sup> When they heard it, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, “O Lord, you are God, who made the heaven, the earth, the sea, and all that is in them; <sup>25</sup> who by the mouth of your servant, David, said,

‘Why do the nations rage,  
and the peoples plot a vain thing?  
<sup>26</sup> The kings of the earth take a stand,  
and the rulers take council together,  
against the Lord, and against his Christ.’

<sup>27</sup> “For truly, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together against your holy servant, Jesus, whom you anointed, <sup>28</sup> to do whatever your hand and your council foreordained to happen. <sup>29</sup> Now, Lord, look at their threats, and grant to your servants to speak your word with all boldness, <sup>30</sup> while you stretch out your hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done through the name of your holy Servant Jesus.”

<sup>31</sup> When they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were gathered together. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of God with boldness. <sup>32</sup> The multitude of those who believed were of one heart and soul. Not one of them claimed that anything of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common. <sup>33</sup> With great power, the apostles gave their testimony of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus. Great grace was on them all. <sup>34</sup> For neither was there among them any who lacked, for as many as were owners of lands or houses sold them, and brought the proceeds of the things that were sold, <sup>35</sup> and laid them at the apostles’ feet, and distribution was made to each, according as anyone had need. <sup>36</sup> Joses, who by the apostles was also called Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, Son of Encouragement), a Levite, a man of Cyprus by race, <sup>37</sup> having a field, sold it and brought the money and laid it at the apostles’ feet.

**5** But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira, his wife, sold a possession, <sup>2</sup> and kept back part of the price, his wife also being aware of it, then brought a certain part and laid it at the apostles’ feet. <sup>3</sup> But Peter said, “Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and to keep back part of the price of the land? <sup>4</sup> While you kept it, didn’t it



remain your own? After it was sold, wasn't it in your power? How is it that you have conceived this thing in your heart? You haven't lied to men, but to God."

<sup>5</sup> Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and died. Great fear came on all who heard these things. <sup>6</sup> The young men arose and wrapped him up, and they carried him out and buried him. <sup>7</sup> About three hours later, his wife, not knowing what had happened, came in. <sup>8</sup> Peter answered her, "Tell me whether you sold the land for so much."

She said, "Yes, for so much."

<sup>9</sup> But Peter asked her, "How is it that you have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out."

<sup>10</sup> She fell down immediately at his feet and died. The young men came in and found her dead, and they carried her out and buried her by her husband. <sup>11</sup> Great fear came on the whole assembly, and on all who heard these things. <sup>12</sup> By the hands of the apostles many signs and wonders were done among the people. They were all with one accord in Solomon's porch. <sup>13</sup> None of the rest dared to join them, however the people honoured them. <sup>14</sup> More believers were added to the Lord, multitudes of both men and women. <sup>15</sup> They even carried out the sick into the streets, and laid them on cots and mattresses, so that as Peter came by, at the least his shadow might overshadow some of them. <sup>16</sup> The multitude also came together from the cities around Jerusalem, bringing sick people and those who were tormented by unclean spirits: and they were all healed.

<sup>17</sup> But the high priest rose up, and all those who were with him (which is the sect of the Sadducees), and they were filled with jealousy <sup>18</sup> and laid hands on the apostles, then put them in public custody. <sup>19</sup> But an angel of the Lord opened the prison doors by night, and brought them out and said, <sup>20</sup> "Go stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life."

<sup>21</sup> When they heard this, they entered into the temple about daybreak and taught. But the high priest came, and those who were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought. <sup>22</sup> But the officers who came didn't find them in the prison. They returned and reported, <sup>23</sup> "We found the

prison shut and locked, and the guards standing before the doors, but when we opened them, we found no one inside!”

<sup>24</sup> Now when the high priest, the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these words, they were very perplexed about them and what might become of this. <sup>25</sup> One came and told them, “Behold, the men whom you put in prison are in the temple, standing and teaching the people.” <sup>26</sup> Then the captain went with the officers, and brought them without violence, for they were afraid that the people might stone them.

<sup>27</sup> When they had brought them, they set them before the council. The high priest questioned them, <sup>28</sup> saying, “Didn’t we strictly command you not to teach in this name? Behold, you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and intend to bring this man’s blood on us.”

<sup>29</sup> But Peter and the apostles answered, “We must obey God rather than men. <sup>30</sup> The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom you killed, hanging him on a tree. <sup>31</sup> God exalted him with his right hand to be a Prince and a Savior, to give repentance to Israel, and remission of sins. <sup>32</sup> We are his witnesses of these things; and so also is the Holy Spirit, whom God has given to those who obey him.”

<sup>33</sup> But they, when they heard this, were cut to the heart, and were determined to kill them. <sup>34</sup> But one stood up in the council, a Pharisee named Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, honoured by all the people, and commanded to put the apostles out for a little while. <sup>35</sup> He said to them, “You men of Israel, be careful concerning these men, what you are about to do. <sup>36</sup> For before these days Theudas rose up, making himself out to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves. He was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were dispersed, and came to nothing. <sup>37</sup> After this man, Judas of Galilee rose up in the days of the enrolment and drew away some people after him. He also perished, and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered abroad. <sup>38</sup> Now I tell you, withdraw from these men, and leave them alone. For if this counsel or this work is of men, it will be overthrown. <sup>39</sup> But if it is of God, you will not be able to overthrow it, and you would be found even to be fighting against God!”

<sup>40</sup> They agreed with him. Summoning the apostles, they beat them and commanded them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. <sup>41</sup> They therefore departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer dishonour for Jesus’ name.

<sup>42</sup> Every day, in the temple and at home, they never stopped teaching and preaching Jesus, the Christ.

**6** Now in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying, a complaint arose from the Hellenists against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily service. <sup>2</sup>The twelve summoned the multitude of the disciples and said, "It is not appropriate for us to forsake the word of God and serve tables. <sup>3</sup>Therefore select from among you, brothers, seven men of good report, full of the Holy Spirit and of wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. <sup>4</sup>But we will continue steadfastly in prayer and in the ministry of the word."

<sup>5</sup> These words pleased the whole multitude. They chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicolaus, a proselyte of Antioch; <sup>6</sup> whom they set before the apostles. When they had prayed, they laid their hands on them. <sup>7</sup> The word of God increased and the number of the disciples greatly multiplied in Jerusalem. A great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

<sup>8</sup> Stephen, full of faith and power, performed great wonders and signs among the people. <sup>9</sup> But some of those who were of the synagogue called "The Libertines", and of the Cyrenians, of the Alexandrians, and of those of Cilicia and Asia arose, disputing with Stephen. <sup>10</sup> They weren't able to withstand the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke. <sup>11</sup> Then they secretly induced men to say, "We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and God." <sup>12</sup> They stirred up the people, the elders, and the scribes, and came against him and seized him, then brought him in to the council, <sup>13</sup> and set up false witnesses who said, "This man never stops speaking blasphemous words against this holy place and the law. <sup>14</sup> For we have heard him say that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place, and will change the customs which Moses delivered to us." <sup>15</sup> All who sat in the council, fastening their eyes on him, saw his face like it was the face of an angel.

**7** The high priest said, "Are these things so?"

<sup>2</sup> He said, "Brothers and fathers, listen. The God of glory appeared to our father Abraham when he was in Mesopotamia, before he lived in Haran, <sup>3</sup> and said to him, 'Get out of your land and away from your relatives, and come into a land which I will show you.' <sup>4</sup> Then he came out of the land of the Chaldaeans and lived in Haran. From there, when his father was dead, God moved him into this land, where you are now

living.<sup>5</sup> He gave him no inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on. He promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his offspring after him, when he still had no child.<sup>6</sup> God spoke in this way: that his offspring would live as aliens in a strange land, and that they would be enslaved and mistreated for four hundred years.<sup>7</sup> ‘I will judge the nation to which they will be in bondage,’ said God, ‘and after that they will come out, and serve me in this place.’<sup>8</sup> He gave him the covenant of circumcision. So Abraham became the father of Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day. Isaac became the father of Jacob, and Jacob became the father of the twelve patriarchs.

<sup>9</sup> “The patriarchs, moved with jealousy against Joseph, sold him into Egypt. God was with him,<sup>10</sup> and delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom before Pharaoh, king of Egypt. He made him governor over Egypt and all his house.<sup>11</sup> Now a famine came over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction. Our fathers found no food.<sup>12</sup> But when Jacob heard that there was grain in Egypt, he sent out our fathers the first time.<sup>13</sup> On the second time Joseph was made known to his brothers, and Joseph’s race was revealed to Pharaoh.<sup>14</sup> Joseph sent and summoned Jacob, his father, and all his relatives, seventy-five souls.<sup>15</sup> Jacob went down into Egypt and he died, himself and our fathers,<sup>16</sup> and they were brought back to Shechem, and laid in the tomb that Abraham bought for a price in silver from the children of Hamor of Shechem.

<sup>17</sup> “But as the time of the promise came close which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,<sup>18</sup> until there arose a different king, who didn’t know Joseph.<sup>19</sup> The same took advantage of our race, and mistreated our fathers, and forced them to throw out their babies, so that they wouldn’t stay alive.<sup>20</sup> At that time Moses was born, and was exceedingly handsome. He was nourished three months in his father’s house.<sup>21</sup> When he was thrown out, Pharaoh’s daughter took him up and reared him as her own son.<sup>22</sup> Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians. He was mighty in his words and works.<sup>23</sup> But when he was forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brothers, the children of Israel.<sup>24</sup> Seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him who was oppressed, striking the Egyptian.<sup>25</sup> He supposed that his brothers understood that God, by his hand, was giving them deliverance; but they didn’t understand.

<sup>26</sup> “The day following, he appeared to them as they fought, and urged them to be at peace again, saying, ‘Sirs, you are brothers. Why do you wrong

one another?’ <sup>27</sup> But he who did his neighbour wrong pushed him away, saying, ‘Who made you a ruler and a judge over us?’ <sup>28</sup> Do you want to kill me, as you killed the Egyptian yesterday?’ <sup>29</sup> Moses fled at this saying, and became a stranger in the land of Midian, where he became the father of two sons.

<sup>30</sup> “When forty years were fulfilled, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai, in a flame of fire in a bush. <sup>31</sup> When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight. As he came close to see, a voice of the Lord came to him, <sup>32</sup> ‘I am the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’ Exodus 3:6 Moses trembled, and dared not look. <sup>33</sup> The Lord said to him, ‘Take off your sandals, for the place where you stand is holy ground. <sup>34</sup> I have surely seen the affliction of my people that is in Egypt, and have heard their groaning. I have come down to deliver them. Now come, I will send you into Egypt.’

<sup>35</sup> “This Moses, whom they refused, saying, ‘Who made you a ruler and a judge?’—God has sent him as both a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel who appeared to him in the bush. <sup>36</sup> This man led them out, having worked wonders and signs in Egypt, in the Red Sea, and in the wilderness for forty years. <sup>37</sup> This is that Moses, who said to the children of Israel, ‘The Lord our God will raise up a prophet for you from among your brothers, like me.’ <sup>38</sup> This is he who was in the assembly in the wilderness with the angel that spoke to him on Mount Sinai, and with our fathers, who received living revelations to give to us, <sup>39</sup> to whom our fathers wouldn’t be obedient, but rejected him, and turned back in their hearts to Egypt, <sup>40</sup> saying to Aaron, ‘Make us gods that will go before us, for as for this Moses, who led us out of the land of Egypt, we don’t know what has become of him.’ <sup>41</sup> They made a calf in those days, and brought a sacrifice to the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their hands. <sup>42</sup> But God turned, and gave them up to serve the army of the sky, as it is written in the book of the prophets,

‘Did you offer to me slain animals and sacrifices  
forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel?

<sup>43</sup> You took up the tabernacle of Moloch,  
the star of your god Rephan,  
the figures which you made to worship.  
I will carry you away beyond Babylon.’

<sup>44</sup> “Our fathers had the tabernacle of the testimony in the wilderness, even as he who spoke to Moses commanded him to make it according to the

pattern that he had seen; <sup>45</sup> which also our fathers, in their turn, brought in with Joshua when they entered into the possession of the nations, whom God drove out before the face of our fathers, to the days of David, <sup>46</sup> who found favour in the sight of God, and asked to find a habitation for the God of Jacob. <sup>47</sup> But Solomon built him a house. <sup>48</sup> However, the Most High doesn't dwell in temples made with hands, as the prophet says,

<sup>49</sup> 'heaven is my throne,  
and the earth a footstool for my feet.  
What kind of house will you build me?' says the Lord.

'Or what is the place of my rest?

<sup>50</sup> Didn't my hand make all these things?'

<sup>51</sup> "You stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, you always resist the Holy Spirit! As your fathers did, so you do. <sup>52</sup> Which of the prophets didn't your fathers persecute? They killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, of whom you have now become betrayers and murderers. <sup>53</sup> You received the law as it was ordained by angels, and didn't keep it!"

<sup>54</sup> Now when they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed at him with their teeth. <sup>55</sup> But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up steadfastly into heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, <sup>56</sup> and said, "Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God!"

<sup>57</sup> But they cried out with a loud voice and stopped their ears, then rushed at him with one accord. <sup>58</sup> They threw him out of the city and stoned him. The witnesses placed their garments at the feet of a young man named Saul. <sup>59</sup> They stoned Stephen as he called out, saying, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" <sup>60</sup> He knelt down, and cried with a loud voice, "Lord, don't hold this sin against them!" When he had said this, he fell asleep.

**8** Saul was consenting to his death. A great persecution arose against the assembly which was in Jerusalem in that day. They were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except for the apostles. <sup>2</sup> Devout men buried Stephen and lamented greatly over him. <sup>3</sup> But Saul ravaged the assembly, entering into every house and dragged both men and women off to prison. <sup>4</sup> Therefore those who were scattered abroad went around preaching the word. <sup>5</sup> Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and proclaimed to them the Christ. <sup>6</sup> The multitudes listened with one accord to the things that were spoken by Philip when

they heard and saw the signs which he did. <sup>7</sup> For unclean spirits came out of many of those who had them. They came out, crying with a loud voice. Many who had been paralyzed and lame were healed. <sup>8</sup> There was great joy in that city.

<sup>9</sup> But there was a certain man, Simon by name, who used to practice sorcery in the city and amazed the people of Samaria, making himself out to be some great one, <sup>10</sup> to whom they all listened, from the least to the greatest, saying, "This man is that great power of God." <sup>11</sup> They listened to him, because for a long time he had amazed them with his sorceries. <sup>12</sup> But when they believed Philip preaching good news concerning God's Kingdom and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. <sup>13</sup> Simon himself also believed. Being baptized, he continued with Philip. Seeing signs and great miracles occurring, he was amazed.

<sup>14</sup> Now when the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them, <sup>15</sup> who, when they had come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Spirit; <sup>16</sup> for as yet he had fallen on none of them. They had only been baptized in the name of Christ Jesus. <sup>17</sup> Then they laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. <sup>18</sup> Now when Simon saw that the Holy Spirit was given through the laying on of the apostles' hands, he offered them money, <sup>19</sup> saying, "Give me also this power, that whomever I lay my hands on may receive the Holy Spirit." <sup>20</sup> But Peter said to him, "May your silver perish with you, because you thought you could obtain the gift of God with money! <sup>21</sup> You have neither part nor lot in this matter, for your heart isn't right before God. <sup>22</sup> Repent therefore of this, your wickedness, and ask God if perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you. <sup>23</sup> For I see that you are in the poison of bitterness and in the bondage of iniquity."

<sup>24</sup> Simon answered, "Pray for me to the Lord, that none of the things which you have spoken happen to me."

<sup>25</sup> They therefore, when they had testified and spoken the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the Good News to many villages of the Samaritans. <sup>26</sup> But an angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying, "Arise, and go toward the south to the way that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza. This is a desert."

<sup>27</sup> He arose and went; and behold, there was a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch of great authority under Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, who was over

all her treasure, who had come to Jerusalem to worship.<sup>28</sup> He was returning and sitting in his chariot, and was reading the prophet Isaiah.

<sup>29</sup> The Spirit said to Philip, “Go near, and join yourself to this chariot.”

<sup>30</sup> Philip ran to him, and heard him reading Isaiah the prophet, and said, “Do you understand what you are reading?”

<sup>31</sup> He said, “How can I, unless someone explains it to me?” He begged Philip to come up and sit with him. <sup>32</sup> Now the passage of the Scripture which he was reading was this,

“He was led as a sheep to the slaughter.

As a lamb before his shearer is silent,  
so he doesn’t open his mouth.

<sup>33</sup> In his humiliation, his judgment was taken away.

Who will declare His generation?

For his life is taken from the earth.”

<sup>34</sup> The eunuch answered Philip, “Who is the prophet talking about? About himself, or about someone else?”

<sup>35</sup> Philip opened his mouth, and beginning from this Scripture, preached to him about Jesus. <sup>36</sup> As they went on the way, they came to some water, and the eunuch said, “Behold, here is water. What is keeping me from being baptized?”

<sup>37 38</sup> He commanded the chariot to stand still, and they both went down into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he baptized him.

<sup>39</sup> When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, and the eunuch didn’t see him anymore, for he went on his way rejoicing. <sup>40</sup> But Philip was found at Azotus. Passing through, he preached the Good News to all the cities, until he came to Caesarea.

**9** But Saul, still breathing threats and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest<sup>2</sup> and asked for letters from him to the synagogues of Damascus, that if he found any who were of the Way, whether men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. <sup>3</sup> As he travelled, he got close to Damascus, and suddenly a light from the sky shone around him. <sup>4</sup> He fell on the earth, and heard a voice saying to



him, “Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?”

<sup>5</sup> He said, “Who are you, Lord?”

The Lord said, “I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting. <sup>[a]</sup> <sup>6</sup> But <sup>[p]</sup> rise up and enter into the city, then you will be told what you must do.”

<sup>7</sup> The men who travelled with him stood speechless, hearing the sound, but seeing no one. <sup>8</sup> Saul arose from the ground, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no one. They led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. <sup>9</sup> He was without sight for three days, and neither ate nor drank.

<sup>10</sup> Now there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias. The Lord said to him in a vision, “Ananias!”

He said, “Behold, it’s me, Lord.”

<sup>11</sup> The Lord said to him, “Arise, and go to the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judah for one named Saul, a man of Tarsus. For behold, he is praying, <sup>12</sup> and in a vision he has seen a man named Ananias coming in and laying his hands on him, that he might receive his sight.”

<sup>13</sup> But Ananias answered, “Lord, I have heard from many about this man, how much evil he did to your saints at Jerusalem. <sup>14</sup> Here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all who call on your name.”

<sup>15</sup> But the Lord said to him, “Go your way, for he is my chosen vessel to bear my name before the nations and kings, and the children of Israel. <sup>16</sup> For I will show him how many things he must suffer for my name’s sake.”

<sup>17</sup> Ananias departed and entered into the house. Laying his hands on him, he said, “Brother Saul, the Lord, who appeared to you on the road by which you came, has sent me that you may receive your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.” <sup>18</sup> Immediately something like scales fell from his eyes, and he received his sight. He arose and was baptized. <sup>19</sup> He took food and was strengthened. Saul stayed several days with the disciples who were at Damascus. <sup>20</sup> Immediately in the synagogues he proclaimed the Christ, that he is the Son of God. <sup>21</sup> All who heard him were amazed, and said, “Isn’t this he who in Jerusalem made havoc of those who called on this

name? And he had come here intending to bring them bound before the chief priests!”

<sup>22</sup> But Saul increased more in strength, and confounded the Jews who lived at Damascus, proving that this is the Christ. <sup>23</sup> When many days were fulfilled, the Jews conspired together to kill him, <sup>24</sup> but their plot became known to Saul. They watched the gates both day and night that they might kill him, <sup>25</sup> but his disciples took him by night and let him down through the wall, lowering him in a basket. <sup>26</sup> When Saul had come to Jerusalem, he tried to join himself to the disciples; but they were all afraid of him, not believing that he was a disciple. <sup>27</sup> But Barnabas took him and brought him to the apostles, and declared to them how he had seen the Lord on the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how at Damascus he had preached boldly in the name of Jesus. <sup>28</sup> He was with them entering into Jerusalem, <sup>29</sup> preaching boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus. He spoke and disputed against the Hellenists, but they were seeking to kill him. <sup>30</sup> When the brothers knew it, they brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him off to Tarsus. <sup>31</sup> So the assemblies throughout all Judea, Galilee, and Samaria had peace, and were built up. They were multiplied, walking in the fear of the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit.

<sup>32</sup> As Peter went throughout all those parts, he came down also to the saints who lived at Lydda. <sup>33</sup> There he found a certain man named Aeneas, who had been bedridden for eight years, because he was paralyzed. <sup>34</sup> Peter said to him, “Aeneas, Jesus Christ heals you. Get up and make your bed!” Immediately he arose. <sup>35</sup> All who lived at Lydda and in Sharon saw him, and they turned to the Lord.

**10** Now there was a certain man in Caesarea, Cornelius by name, a centurion of what was called the Italian Regiment, <sup>2</sup> a devout man, and one who feared God with all his house, who gave gifts for the needy generously to the people, and always prayed to God. <sup>3</sup> At about the ninth hour of the day, he clearly saw in a vision an angel of God coming to him, and saying to him, “Cornelius!”

<sup>4</sup> He, fastening his eyes on him, and being frightened, said, “What is it, Lord?”

He said to him, “Your prayers and your gifts to the needy have gone up for a memorial before God. <sup>5</sup> Now send men to Joppa, and get

Simon, who is also called Peter. <sup>6</sup> He is staying with a tanner named Simon, whose house is by the seaside.

<sup>7</sup> When the angel who spoke to him had departed, Cornelius called two of his household servants and a devout soldier of those who waited on him continually. <sup>8</sup> Having explained everything to them, he sent them to Joppa. <sup>9</sup> Now on the next day as they were on their journey, and got close to the city, Peter went up on the housetop to pray at about noon. <sup>10</sup> He became hungry and desired to eat, but while they were preparing, he fell into a trance. <sup>11</sup> He saw heaven opened and a certain container descending to him, like a great sheet let down by four corners on the earth, <sup>12</sup> in which were all kinds of four-footed animals of the earth, wild animals, reptiles, and birds of the sky. <sup>13</sup> A voice came to him, "Rise, Peter, kill and eat!"

<sup>14</sup> But Peter said, "Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean."

<sup>15</sup> A voice came to him again the second time, "What God has cleansed, you must not call unclean." <sup>16</sup> This was done three times, and immediately the vessel was received up into heaven. <sup>17</sup> Now while Peter was very perplexed in himself what the vision which he had seen might mean, behold, the men who were sent by Cornelius, having made inquiry for Simon's house, stood before the gate, <sup>18</sup> and called and asked whether Simon, who was also called Peter, was lodging there. <sup>19</sup> While Peter was pondering the vision, the Spirit said to him, "Behold, three men seek you. <sup>20</sup> But arise, get down, and go with them, doubting nothing; for I have sent them."

<sup>21</sup> Peter went down to the men, and said, "Behold, I am he whom you seek. Why have you come?"

<sup>22</sup> They said, "Cornelius, a centurion, a righteous man and one who fears God, and well spoken of by all the nation of the Jews, was directed by a holy angel to invite you to his house, and to listen to what you say." <sup>23</sup> So he called them in and provided a place to stay. On the next day Peter arose and went out with them, and some of the brothers from Joppa accompanied him. <sup>24</sup> On the next day they

entered into Caesarea. Cornelius was waiting for them, having called together his relatives and his near friends.<sup>25</sup> When Peter entered, Cornelius met him, fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.<sup>26</sup> But Peter raised him up, saying, “Stand up! I myself am also a man.”<sup>27</sup> As he talked with him, he went in and found many gathered together.<sup>28</sup> He said to them, “You yourselves know how it is an unlawful thing for a man who is a Jew to join himself or come to one of another nation, but God has shown me that I shouldn’t call any man unholy or unclean.<sup>29</sup> Therefore I also came without complaint when I was sent for. I ask therefore, why did you send for me?”

<sup>30</sup> Cornelius said, “Four days ago, I was fasting until this hour, and at the ninth hour, I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,<sup>31</sup> and said, ‘Cornelius, your prayer is heard, and your gifts to the needy are remembered in the sight of God.<sup>32</sup> Send therefore to Joppa and summon Simon, who is also called Peter. He is staying in the house of a tanner named Simon, by the seaside. When he comes, he will speak to you.’<sup>33</sup> Therefore I sent to you at once, and it was good of you to come. Now therefore we are all here present in the sight of God to hear all things that have been commanded you by God.”

<sup>34</sup> Peter opened his mouth and said, “Truly I perceive that God doesn’t show favouritism;<sup>35</sup> but in every nation he who fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him.<sup>36</sup> The word which he sent to the children of Israel, preaching good news of peace by Jesus Christ—he is Lord of all—<sup>37</sup> you yourselves know what happened, which was proclaimed throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached;<sup>38</sup> even Jesus of Nazareth, how God anointed him with the Holy Spirit and with power, who went about doing good and healing all who were oppressed by the devil, for God was with him.<sup>39</sup> We are witnesses of everything he did both in the country of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they also killed, hanging him on a tree.<sup>40</sup> God raised him up the third day, and gave him to be revealed,<sup>41</sup> not to all the people, but to witnesses who were chosen before by God, to us, who ate and drank with him after he rose from the dead.<sup>42</sup> He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that this is he who is appointed by God as the

Judge of the living and the dead. <sup>43</sup> All the prophets testify about him, that through his name everyone who believes in him will receive remission of sins.”

<sup>44</sup> While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all those who heard the word. <sup>45</sup> They of the circumcision who believed were amazed, as many as came with Peter, because the gift of the Holy Spirit was also poured out on the Gentiles. <sup>46</sup> For they heard them speaking in other languages and magnifying God.

Then Peter answered, <sup>47</sup> “Can anyone forbid these people from being baptized with water? They have received the Holy Spirit just like us.” <sup>48</sup> He commanded them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they asked him to stay some days.

**11** Now the apostles and the brothers who were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God. <sup>2</sup> When Peter had come up to Jerusalem, those who were of the circumcision contended with him, <sup>3</sup> saying, “You went in to uncircumcised men, and ate with them!”

<sup>4</sup> But Peter began, and explained to them in order, saying, <sup>5</sup> “I was in the city of Joppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision: a certain container descending, like it was a great sheet let down from heaven by four corners. It came as far as me. <sup>6</sup> When I had looked intently at it, I considered, and saw the four-footed animals of the earth, wild animals, creeping things, and birds of the sky. <sup>7</sup> I also heard a voice saying to me, ‘Rise, Peter, kill and eat!’ <sup>8</sup> But I said, ‘Not so, Lord, for nothing unholy or unclean has ever entered into my mouth.’ <sup>9</sup> But a voice answered me the second time out of heaven, ‘What God has cleansed, don’t you call unclean.’ <sup>10</sup> This was done three times, and all were drawn up again into heaven. <sup>11</sup> Behold, immediately three men stood before the house where I was, having been sent from Caesarea to me. <sup>12</sup> The Spirit told me to go with them, without discriminating. These six brothers also accompanied me, and we entered into the man’s house. <sup>13</sup> He told us how he had seen the angel standing in his house, and saying to him, ‘Send to Joppa, and get Simon, who is called Peter, <sup>14</sup> who will speak to you words by which

you will be saved, you and all your house.’ <sup>15</sup> As I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them, even as on us at the beginning. <sup>16</sup> I remembered the word of the Lord, how he said, ‘John indeed baptized in water, but you will be baptized in the Holy Spirit.’ <sup>17</sup> If then God gave to them the same gift as us, when we believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I, that I could withstand God?”

<sup>18</sup> When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, “Then God has also granted to the Gentiles repentance to life!”

<sup>19</sup> They therefore who were scattered abroad by the oppression that arose about Stephen travelled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, speaking the word to no one except to Jews only. <sup>20</sup> But there were some of them, men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who, when they had come to Antioch, spoke to the Hellenists, preaching the Lord Jesus. <sup>21</sup> The hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number believed and turned to the Lord. <sup>22</sup> The report concerning them came to the ears of the assembly which was in Jerusalem. They sent out Barnabas to go as far as Antioch, <sup>23</sup> who, when he had come, and had seen the grace of God, was glad. He exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they should remain near to the Lord. <sup>24</sup> For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith, and many people were added to the Lord.

<sup>25</sup> Barnabas went out to Tarsus to look for Saul. <sup>26</sup> When he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. For a whole year they were gathered together with the assembly, and taught many people. The disciples were first called Christians in Antioch.

<sup>27</sup> Now in these days, prophets came down from Jerusalem to Antioch. <sup>28</sup> One of them named Agabus stood up, and indicated by the Spirit that there should be a great famine all over the world, which also happened in the days of Claudius. <sup>29</sup> As any of the disciples had plenty, each determined to send relief to the brothers who lived in Judea; <sup>30</sup> which they also did, sending it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

**12** Now about that time, King Herod stretched out his hands to oppress some of the assembly. <sup>2</sup> He killed James, the brother of John, with the sword. <sup>3</sup> When he saw that it pleased the Jews, he proceeded to seize Peter also. This was during the days of unleavened bread. <sup>4</sup> When he had arrested him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four squads of four soldiers each to guard him, intending to bring him out to the people after the Passover. <sup>5</sup> Peter therefore was kept in the prison, but constant prayer was made by the assembly to God for him. <sup>6</sup> The same night when Herod was about to bring him out, Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains. Guards in front of the door kept the prison.

<sup>7</sup> And behold, an angel of the Lord stood by him, and a light shone in the cell. He struck Peter on the side, and woke him up, saying, "Stand up quickly!" His chains fell off his hands. <sup>8</sup> The angel said to him, "Get dressed and put on your sandals." He did so. He said to him, "Put on your cloak and follow me." <sup>9</sup> And he went out and followed him. He didn't know that what was being done by the angel was real, but thought he saw a vision. <sup>10</sup> When they were past the first and the second guard, they came to the iron gate that leads into the city, which opened to them by itself. They went out, and went down one street, and immediately the angel departed from him.

<sup>11</sup> When Peter had come to himself, he said, "Now I truly know that the Lord has sent out his angel and delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from everything the Jewish people were expecting." <sup>12</sup> Thinking about that, he came to the house of Mary, the mother of John who was called Mark, where many were gathered together and were praying. <sup>13</sup> When Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a servant girl named Rhoda came to answer. <sup>14</sup> When she recognized Peter's voice, she didn't open the gate for joy, but ran in, and reported that Peter was standing in front of the gate.

<sup>15</sup> They said to her, "You are crazy!" But she insisted that it was so. They said, "It is his angel." <sup>16</sup> But Peter continued knocking. When they had opened, they saw him, and were amazed. <sup>17</sup> But he, beckoning to them with his hand to be silent, declared to them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. He said, "Tell these

things to James and to the brothers.” Then he departed and went to another place.

<sup>18</sup> Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers about what had become of Peter. <sup>19</sup> When Herod had sought for him, and didn’t find him, he examined the guards, then commanded that they should be put to death. He went down from Judea to Caesarea, and stayed there. <sup>20</sup> Now Herod was very angry with the people of Tyre and Sidon. They came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus, the king’s personal aide, their friend, they asked for peace, because their country depended on the king’s country for food. <sup>21</sup> On an appointed day, Herod dressed himself in royal clothing, sat on the throne, and gave a speech to them. <sup>22</sup> The people shouted, “The voice of a god, and not of a man!” <sup>23</sup> Immediately an angel of the Lord struck him, because he didn’t give God the glory. Then he was eaten by worms and died.

<sup>24</sup> But the word of God grew and multiplied. <sup>25</sup> Barnabas and Saul returned to Jerusalem when they had fulfilled their service, also taking with them John who was called Mark.

**13** Now in the assembly that was at Antioch there were some prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon who was called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen the foster brother of Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. <sup>2</sup> As they served the Lord and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, “Separate Barnabas and Saul for me, for the work to which I have called them.”

<sup>3</sup> Then, when they had fasted and prayed and laid their hands on them, they sent them away. <sup>4</sup> So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia. From there they sailed to Cyprus. <sup>5</sup> When they were at Salamis, they proclaimed God’s word in the Jewish synagogues. They also had John as their attendant. <sup>6</sup> When they had gone through the island to Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Bar Jesus, <sup>7</sup> who was with the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, a man of understanding. This man summoned Barnabas and Saul, and sought to hear the word of God. <sup>8</sup> But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his



name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn the proconsul away from the faith. <sup>9</sup> But Saul, who is also called Paul, filled with the Holy Spirit, fastened his eyes on him, <sup>10</sup> and said, “You son of the devil, full of all deceit and all cunning, you enemy of all righteousness, will you not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord? <sup>11</sup> Now, behold, the hand of the Lord is on you, and you will be blind, not seeing the sun for a season!”

Immediately a mist and darkness fell on him. He went around seeking someone to lead him by the hand. <sup>12</sup> Then the proconsul, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the teaching of the Lord.

<sup>13</sup> Now Paul and his company set sail from Paphos, and came to Perga in Pamphylia. John departed from them and returned to Jerusalem. <sup>14</sup> But they, passing on from Perga, came to Antioch of Pisidia. They went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sat down. <sup>15</sup> After the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent to them, saying, “Brothers, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, speak.”

<sup>16</sup> Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand said, “Men of Israel, and you who fear God, listen. <sup>17</sup> The God of this people chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they stayed as aliens in the land of Egypt, and with an uplifted arm, he led them out of it. <sup>18</sup> For a period of about forty years he put up with them in the wilderness. <sup>19</sup> When he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he gave them their land for an inheritance for about four hundred fifty years. <sup>20</sup> After these things, he gave them judges until Samuel the prophet. <sup>21</sup> Afterward they asked for a king, and God gave to them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, for forty years. <sup>22</sup> When he had removed him, he raised up David to be their king, to whom he also testified, ‘I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after my heart, who will do all my will.’ <sup>23</sup> From this man’s offspring, God has brought salvation to Israel according to his promise, <sup>24</sup> before his coming, when John had first preached the baptism of repentance to Israel. <sup>25</sup> As John was fulfilling his course, he said, ‘What do you suppose that I am? I am not he. But behold,

one comes after me, the sandals of whose feet I am not worthy to untie.’<sup>26</sup> Brothers, children of the stock of Abraham, and those among you who fear God, the word of this salvation is sent out to you.<sup>27</sup> For those who dwell in Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they didn’t know him, nor the voices of the prophets which are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them by condemning him.<sup>28</sup> Though they found no cause for death, they still asked Pilate to have him killed.<sup>29</sup> When they had fulfilled all things that were written about him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a tomb.<sup>30</sup> But God raised him from the dead,<sup>31</sup> and he was seen for many days by those who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses to the people.<sup>32</sup> We bring you good news of the promise made to the fathers,<sup>33</sup> that God has fulfilled this to us, their children, in that he raised up Jesus. As it is also written in the second psalm,

‘You are my Son.

Today I have become your father.’

<sup>34</sup> “Concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he has spoken thus: ‘I will give you the holy and sure blessings of David.’<sup>35</sup> Therefore he says also in another psalm, ‘You will not allow your Holy One to see decay.’<sup>36</sup> For David, after he had in his own generation served the counsel of God, fell asleep, was laid with his fathers, and saw decay.<sup>37</sup> But he whom God raised up saw no decay.<sup>38</sup> Be it known to you therefore, brothers, that through this man is proclaimed to you remission of sins,<sup>39</sup> and by him everyone who believes is justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses.<sup>40</sup> Beware therefore, lest that come on you which is spoken in the prophets:

<sup>41</sup> ‘Behold, you scoffers, and wonder, and perish;  
for I work a work in your days,  
a work which you will in no way believe, if one declares it to you.’”

<sup>42</sup> So when the Jews went out of the synagogue, the Gentiles begged that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath.<sup>43</sup> Now

when the synagogue broke up, many of the Jews and of the devout proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas; who, speaking to them, urged them to continue in the grace of God. <sup>44</sup> The next Sabbath, almost the whole city was gathered together to hear the word of God. <sup>45</sup> But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with jealousy, and contradicted the things which were spoken by Paul, and blasphemed.

<sup>46</sup> Paul and Barnabas spoke out boldly, and said, "It was necessary that God's word should be spoken to you first. Since indeed you thrust it from yourselves, and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, behold, we turn to the Gentiles. <sup>47</sup> For so has the Lord commanded us, saying,

'I have set you as a light for the Gentiles,  
that you should bring salvation to the uttermost parts of the earth.'"

<sup>48</sup> As the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of God. As many as were appointed to eternal life believed. <sup>49</sup> The Lord's word was spread abroad throughout all the region. <sup>50</sup> But the Jews stirred up the devout and prominent women and the chief men of the city, and stirred up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and threw them out of their borders. <sup>51</sup> But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came to Iconium. <sup>52</sup> The disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

**14** In Iconium, they entered together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke that a great multitude both of Jews and of Greeks believed. <sup>2</sup> But the disbelieving Jews stirred up and embittered the souls of the Gentiles against the brothers. <sup>3</sup> Therefore they stayed there a long time, speaking boldly in the Lord, who testified to the word of his grace, granting signs and wonders to be done by their hands. <sup>4</sup> But the multitude of the city was divided. Part sided with the Jews, and part with the apostles. <sup>5</sup> When some of both the Gentiles and the Jews, with their rulers, made a violent attempt to mistreat and stone them, <sup>6</sup> they became aware of it and fled to the

cities of Lycaonia, Lystra, Derbe, and the surrounding region.<sup>7</sup> There they preached the Good News.

<sup>8</sup> At Lystra a certain man sat, impotent in his feet, a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked. <sup>9</sup> He was listening to Paul speaking, who, fastening eyes on him, and seeing that he had faith to be made whole, <sup>10</sup> said with a loud voice, "Stand upright on your feet!" He leaped up and walked. <sup>11</sup> When the multitude saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voice, saying in the language of Lycaonia, "The gods have come down to us in the likeness of men!" <sup>12</sup> They called Barnabas "Jupiter", and Paul "Mercury", because he was the chief speaker. <sup>13</sup> The priest of Jupiter, whose temple was in front of their city, brought oxen and garlands to the gates, and would have made a sacrifice along with the multitudes. <sup>14</sup> But when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of it, they tore their clothes, and sprang into the multitude, crying out, <sup>15</sup> "Men, why are you doing these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and bring you good news, that you should turn from these vain things to the living God, who made the sky, the earth, the sea, and all that is in them; <sup>16</sup> who in the generations gone by allowed all the nations to walk in their own ways. <sup>17</sup> Yet he didn't leave himself without witness, in that he did good and gave you rains from the sky and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness."

<sup>18</sup> Even saying these things, they hardly stopped the multitudes from making a sacrifice to them. <sup>19</sup> But some Jews from Antioch and Iconium came there, and having persuaded the multitudes, they stoned Paul, and dragged him out of the city, supposing that he was dead.

<sup>20</sup> But as the disciples stood around him, he rose up, and entered into the city. On the next day he went out with Barnabas to Derbe. <sup>21</sup> When they had preached the Good News to that city, and had made many disciples, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, <sup>22</sup> strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that through many afflictions we must enter into God's Kingdom. <sup>23</sup> When they had appointed elders for

them in every assembly, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they had believed.

<sup>24</sup> They passed through Pisidia, and came to Pamphylia. <sup>25</sup> When they had spoken the word in Perga, they went down to Attalia. <sup>26</sup> From there they sailed to Antioch, from where they had been committed to the grace of God for the work which they had fulfilled. <sup>27</sup> When they had arrived, and had gathered the assembly together, they reported all the things that God had done with them, and that he had opened a door of faith to the nations. <sup>28</sup> They stayed there with the disciples for a long time.

**15** Some men came down from Judea and taught the brothers, “Unless you are circumcised after the custom of Moses, you can’t be saved.” <sup>2</sup> Therefore when Paul and Barnabas had no small discord and discussion with them, they appointed Paul and Barnabas, and some others of them, to go up to Jerusalem to the apostles and elders about this question. <sup>3</sup> They, being sent on their way by the assembly, passed through both Phoenicia and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles. They caused great joy to all the brothers. <sup>4</sup> When they had come to Jerusalem, they were received by the assembly and the apostles and the elders, and they reported everything that God had done with them.

<sup>5</sup> But some of the sect of the Pharisees who believed rose up, saying, “It is necessary to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.”

<sup>6</sup> The apostles and the elders were gathered together to see about this matter. <sup>7</sup> When there had been much discussion, Peter rose up and said to them, “Brothers, you know that a good while ago God made a choice among you that by my mouth the nations should hear the word of the Good News and believe. <sup>8</sup> God, who knows the heart, testified about them, giving them the Holy Spirit, just like he did to us. <sup>9</sup> He made no distinction between us and them, cleansing their hearts by faith. <sup>10</sup> Now therefore why do you tempt God, that you should put a yoke on the neck of the disciples which neither our

fathers nor we were able to bear? <sup>11</sup> But we believe that we are saved through the grace of the Lord Jesus, just as they are.”

<sup>12</sup> All the multitude kept silence, and they listened to Barnabas and Paul reporting what signs and wonders God had done among the nations through them. <sup>13</sup> After they were silent, James answered, “Brothers, listen to me. <sup>14</sup> Simeon has reported how God first visited the nations to take out of them a people for his name. <sup>15</sup> This agrees with the words of the prophets. As it is written,

<sup>16</sup> ‘After these things I will return.

I will again build the tabernacle of David, which has fallen.

I will again build its ruins.

I will set it up <sup>17</sup> that the rest of men may seek after the Lord; all the Gentiles who are called by my name, says the Lord, who does all these things.’

<sup>18</sup> “All of God’s works are known to him from eternity. <sup>19</sup> Therefore my judgment is that we don’t trouble those from among the Gentiles who turn to God, <sup>20</sup> but that we write to them that they abstain from the pollution of idols, from sexual immorality, from what is strangled, and from blood. <sup>21</sup> For Moses from generations of old has in every city those who preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath.”

<sup>22</sup> Then it seemed good to the apostles and the elders, with the whole assembly, to choose men out of their company, and send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas: Judas called Barsabbas, and Silas, chief men among the brothers. <sup>23</sup> They wrote these things by their hand:

“The apostles, the elders, and the brothers, to the brothers who are of the Gentiles in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia: greetings. <sup>24</sup> Because we have heard that some who went out from us have troubled you with words, unsettling your souls, saying, ‘You must be circumcised and keep the law,’ to whom we gave no commandment; <sup>25</sup> it seemed good to us, having come to one accord, to choose out men and send them to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, <sup>26</sup> men who have

risked their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>27</sup> We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who themselves will also tell you the same things by word of mouth. <sup>28</sup> For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay no greater burden on you than these necessary things: <sup>29</sup> that you abstain from things sacrificed to idols, from blood, from things strangled, and from sexual immorality, from which if you keep yourselves, it will be well with you. Farewell.”

<sup>30</sup> So, when they were sent off, they came to Antioch. Having gathered the multitude together, they delivered the letter. <sup>31</sup> When they had read it, they rejoiced over the encouragement. <sup>32</sup> Judas and Silas, also being prophets themselves, encouraged the brothers with many words and strengthened them. <sup>33</sup> After they had spent some time there, they were dismissed in peace from the brothers to the apostles. <sup>34</sup> <sup>35</sup> But Paul and Barnabas stayed in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

<sup>36</sup> After some days Paul said to Barnabas, “Let’s return now and visit our brothers in every city in which we proclaimed the word of the Lord, to see how they are doing.” <sup>37</sup> Barnabas planned to take John, who was called Mark, with them also. <sup>38</sup> But Paul didn’t think that it was a good idea to take with them someone who had withdrawn from them in Pamphylia, and didn’t go with them to do the work. <sup>39</sup> Then the contention grew so sharp that they separated from each other. Barnabas took Mark with him and sailed away to Cyprus, <sup>40</sup> but Paul chose Silas and went out, being commended by the brothers to the grace of God. <sup>41</sup> He went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the assemblies.

**16** He came to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a Jewess who believed; but his father was a Greek. <sup>2</sup> The brothers who were at Lystra and Iconium gave a good testimony about him. <sup>3</sup> Paul wanted to have him go out with him, and he took and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in those parts; for they all knew that his father was a Greek. <sup>4</sup> As they went on their way through the cities, they delivered the decrees to them to keep which had been ordained by the apostles

and elders who were at Jerusalem. <sup>5</sup> So the assemblies were strengthened in the faith, and increased in number daily.

<sup>6</sup> When they had gone through the region of Phrygia and Galatia, they were forbidden by the Holy Spirit to speak the word in Asia. <sup>7</sup> When they had come opposite Mysia, they tried to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit didn't allow them. <sup>8</sup> Passing by Mysia, they came down to Troas. <sup>9</sup> A vision appeared to Paul in the night. There was a man of Macedonia standing, begging him, and saying, "Come over into Macedonia and help us." <sup>10</sup> When he had seen the vision, immediately we sought to go out to Macedonia, concluding that the Lord had called us to preach the Good News to them. <sup>11</sup> Setting sail therefore from Troas, we made a straight course to Samothrace, and the day following to Neapolis; <sup>12</sup> and from there to Philippi, which is a city of Macedonia, the foremost of the district, a Roman colony. We were staying some days in this city.

<sup>13</sup> On the Sabbath day we went outside of the city by a riverside, where we supposed there was a place of prayer, and we sat down and spoke to the women who had come together. <sup>14</sup> A certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, one who worshiped God, heard us. The Lord opened her heart to listen to the things which were spoken by Paul. <sup>15</sup> When she and her household were baptized, she begged us, saying, "If you have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and stay." So she persuaded us.

<sup>16</sup> As we were going to prayer, a certain girl having a spirit of divination met us, who brought her masters much gain by fortune telling. <sup>17</sup> Following Paul and us, she cried out, "These men are servants of the Most High God, who proclaim to us a way of salvation!" <sup>18</sup> She was doing this for many days.

But Paul, becoming greatly annoyed, turned and said to the spirit, "I command you in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her!" It came out that very hour. <sup>19</sup> But when her masters saw that the hope of their gain was gone, they seized Paul and Silas, and dragged them into the marketplace before the rulers. <sup>20</sup> When they had brought



them to the magistrates, they said, “These men, being Jews, are agitating our city <sup>21</sup> and advocate customs which it is not lawful for us to accept or to observe, being Romans.”

<sup>22</sup> The multitude rose up together against them and the magistrates tore their clothes from them, then commanded them to be beaten with rods. <sup>23</sup> When they had laid many stripes on them, they threw them into prison, charging the jailer to keep them safely, <sup>24</sup> who, having received such a command, threw them into the inner prison, and secured their feet in the stocks.

<sup>25</sup> But about midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the prisoners were listening to them. <sup>26</sup> Suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken; and immediately all the doors were opened, and everyone’s bonds were loosened. <sup>27</sup> The jailer, being roused out of sleep and seeing the prison doors open, drew his sword and was about to kill himself, supposing that the prisoners had escaped. <sup>28</sup> But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, “Don’t harm yourself, for we are all here!”

<sup>29</sup> He called for lights, sprang in, fell down trembling before Paul and Silas, <sup>30</sup> brought them out, and said, “Sirs, what must I do to be saved?”

<sup>31</sup> They said, “Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household.” <sup>32</sup> They spoke the word of the Lord to him, and to all who were in his house.

<sup>33</sup> He took them the same hour of the night and washed their stripes, and was immediately baptized, he and all his household. <sup>34</sup> He brought them up into his house, and set food before them, and rejoiced greatly, with all his household, having believed in God.

<sup>35</sup> But when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, “Let those men go.”

<sup>36</sup> The jailer reported these words to Paul, saying, “The magistrates have sent to let you go; now therefore come out and go in peace.”

<sup>37</sup> But Paul said to them, “They have beaten us publicly without a trial, men who are Romans, and have cast us into prison! Do they now release us secretly? No, most certainly, but let them come themselves and bring us out!”

<sup>38</sup> The sergeants reported these words to the magistrates, and they were afraid when they heard that they were Romans, <sup>39</sup> and they came and begged them. When they had brought them out, they asked them to depart from the city. <sup>40</sup> They went out of the prison, and entered into Lydia’s house. When they had seen the brothers, they encouraged them, then departed.

**17** Now when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where there was a Jewish synagogue. <sup>2</sup> Paul, as was his custom, went in to them, and for three Sabbath days reasoned with them from the Scriptures, <sup>3</sup> explaining and demonstrating that the Christ had to suffer and rise again from the dead, and saying, “This Jesus, whom I proclaim to you, is the Christ.”

<sup>4</sup> Some of them were persuaded and joined Paul and Silas, of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and not a few of the chief women. <sup>5</sup> But the unpersuaded Jews took along some wicked men from the marketplace, and gathering a crowd, set the city in an uproar. Assaulting the house of Jason, they sought to bring them out to the people. <sup>6</sup> When they didn’t find them, they dragged Jason and certain brothers<sup>[1]</sup> before the rulers of the city, crying, “These who have turned the world upside down have come here also, <sup>7</sup> whom Jason has received. These all act contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, Jesus!” <sup>8</sup> The multitude and the rulers of the city were troubled when they heard these things. <sup>9</sup> When they had taken security from Jason and the rest, they let them go. <sup>10</sup> The brothers immediately sent Paul and Silas away by night to Beroea. When they arrived, they went into the Jewish synagogue.

<sup>11</sup> Now these were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, examining the Scriptures daily to see whether these things were so. <sup>12</sup> Many of them therefore believed; also of the prominent Greek women, and not a few men. <sup>13</sup> But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was proclaimed by Paul at Beroea also, they came there likewise, agitating the multitudes. <sup>14</sup> Then the brothers immediately sent out Paul to go as far as to the sea, and Silas and Timothy still stayed there. <sup>15</sup> But those who escorted Paul brought him as far as Athens. Receiving a commandment to Silas and Timothy that they should come to him very quickly, they departed.

<sup>16</sup> Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was provoked within him as he saw the city full of idols. <sup>17</sup> So he reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews and the devout persons, and in the marketplace every day with those who met him. <sup>18</sup> Some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers also were conversing with him. Some said, “What does this babblers want to say?”

Others said, “He seems to be advocating foreign deities,” because he preached Jesus and the resurrection.

<sup>19</sup> They took hold of him and brought him to the Areopagus, saying, “May we know what this new teaching is, which you are speaking about?” <sup>20</sup> For you bring certain strange things to our ears. We want to know therefore what these things mean.” <sup>21</sup> Now all the Athenians and the strangers living there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing.

<sup>22</sup> Paul stood in the middle of the Areopagus, and said, “You men of Athens, I perceive that you are very religious in all things. <sup>23</sup> For as I passed along and observed the objects of your worship, I also found an altar with this inscription: ‘TO AN UNKNOWN GOD.’ What therefore you worship in ignorance, I announce to you. <sup>24</sup> The God who made the world and all things in it, he, being Lord of heaven and earth, doesn’t dwell in temples made with hands. <sup>25</sup> He isn’t served by men’s hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he himself gives to all life and breath, and all things. <sup>26</sup> He made from

one blood every nation of men to dwell on all the surface of the earth, having determined appointed seasons, and the boundaries of their dwellings, <sup>27</sup> that they should seek the Lord, if perhaps they might reach out for him and find him, though he is not far from each one of us. <sup>28</sup> ‘For in him we live, move, and have our being.’ As some of your own poets have said, ‘For we are also his offspring.’ <sup>29</sup> Being then the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Divine Nature is like gold, or silver, or stone, engraved by art and design of man. <sup>30</sup> The times of ignorance therefore God overlooked. But now he commands that all people everywhere should repent, <sup>31</sup> because he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained; of which he has given assurance to all men, in that he has raised him from the dead.”

<sup>32</sup> Now when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked; but others said, “We want to hear you again concerning this.”

<sup>33</sup> Thus Paul went out from among them. <sup>34</sup> But certain men joined with him and believed, among whom also was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

**18** After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth. <sup>2</sup> He found a certain Jew named Aquila, a man of Pontus by race, who had recently come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, because Claudius had commanded all the Jews to depart from Rome. He came to them, <sup>3</sup> and because he practiced the same trade, he lived with them and worked, for by trade they were tent makers. <sup>4</sup> He reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath and persuaded Jews and Greeks. <sup>5</sup> But when Silas and Timothy came down from Macedonia, Paul was compelled by the Spirit, testifying to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. <sup>6</sup> When they opposed him and blasphemed, he shook out his clothing and said to them, “Your blood be on your own heads! I am clean. From now on, I will go to the Gentiles!”

<sup>7</sup> He departed there, and went into the house of a certain man named Justus, one who worshipped God, whose house was next door to the

synagogue. <sup>8</sup> Crispus, the ruler of the synagogue, believed in the Lord with all his house. Many of the Corinthians, when they heard, believed and were baptized. <sup>9</sup> The Lord said to Paul in the night by a vision, “Don’t be afraid, but speak and don’t be silent; <sup>10</sup> for I am with you, and no one will attack you to harm you, for I have many people in this city.”

<sup>11</sup> He lived there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them. <sup>12</sup> But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews with one accord rose up against Paul and brought him before the judgment seat, <sup>13</sup> saying, “This man persuades men to worship God contrary to the law.”

<sup>14</sup> But when Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews, “If indeed it were a matter of wrong or of wicked crime, you Jews, it would be reasonable that I should bear with you; <sup>15</sup> but if they are questions about words and names and your own law, look to it yourselves. For I don’t want to be a judge of these matters.” <sup>16</sup> So he drove them from the judgment seat.

<sup>17</sup> Then all the Greeks seized Sosthenes, the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat. Gallio didn’t care about any of these things.

<sup>18</sup> Paul, having stayed after this many more days, took his leave of the brothers, and sailed from there for Syria, together with Priscilla and Aquila. He shaved his head in Cenchreae, for he had a vow. <sup>19</sup> He came to Ephesus, and he left them there; but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews. <sup>20</sup> When they asked him to stay with them a longer time, he declined; <sup>21</sup> but taking his leave of them, he said, “I must by all means keep this coming feast in Jerusalem, but I will return again to you if God wills.” Then he set sail from Ephesus.

<sup>22</sup> When he had landed at Caesarea, he went up and greeted the assembly, and went down to Antioch. <sup>23</sup> Having spent some time there, he departed, and went through the region of Galatia, and Phrygia, in order, establishing all the disciples. <sup>24</sup> Now a certain Jew

named Apollos, an Alexandrian by race, an eloquent man, came to Ephesus. He was mighty in the Scriptures. <sup>25</sup> This man had been instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in spirit, he spoke and taught accurately the things concerning Jesus, although he knew only the baptism of John. <sup>26</sup> He began to speak boldly in the synagogue. But when Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him aside, and explained to him the way of God more accurately.

<sup>27</sup> When he had determined to pass over into Achaia, the brothers encouraged him, and wrote to the disciples to receive him. When he had come, he greatly helped those who had believed through grace; <sup>28</sup> for he powerfully refuted the Jews, publicly showing by the Scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.

**19** While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul, having passed through the upper country, came to Ephesus and found certain disciples. <sup>2</sup> He said to them, “Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?”

They said to him, “No, we haven’t even heard that there is a Holy Spirit.”

<sup>3</sup> He said, “Into what then were you baptized?”

They said, “Into John’s baptism.”

<sup>4</sup> Paul said, “John indeed baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people that they should believe in the one who would come after him, that is, in Jesus.”

<sup>5</sup> When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. <sup>6</sup> When Paul had laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them and they spoke with other languages and prophesied. <sup>7</sup> They were about twelve men in all. <sup>8</sup> He entered into the synagogue and spoke boldly for a period of three months, reasoning and persuading about the things concerning God’s Kingdom.

<sup>9</sup> But when some were hardened and disobedient, speaking evil of the Way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated

the disciples, reasoning daily in the school of Tyrannus. <sup>10</sup> This continued for two years, so that all those who lived in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

<sup>11</sup> God worked special miracles by the hands of Paul, <sup>12</sup> so that even handkerchiefs or aprons were carried away from his body to the sick, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out. <sup>13</sup> But some of the itinerant Jews, exorcists, took on themselves to invoke over those who had the evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, “We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preaches.” <sup>14</sup> There were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, who did this.

<sup>15</sup> The evil spirit answered, “Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are you?” <sup>16</sup> The man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, overpowered them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. <sup>17</sup> This became known to all, both Jews and Greeks, who lived at Ephesus. Fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. <sup>18</sup> Many also of those who had believed came, confessing, and declaring their deeds. <sup>19</sup> Many of those who practised magical arts brought their books together and burned them in the sight of all. They counted their price, and found it to be fifty thousand pieces of silver. <sup>20</sup> So the word of the Lord was growing and becoming mighty.

<sup>21</sup> Now after these things had ended, Paul determined in the Spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, “After I have been there, I must also see Rome.”

<sup>22</sup> Having sent into Macedonia two of those who served him, Timothy and Erastus, he himself stayed in Asia for a while. <sup>23</sup> About that time there arose no small disturbance concerning the Way. <sup>24</sup> For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith who made silver shrines of Artemis, brought no little business to the craftsmen, <sup>25</sup> whom he gathered together, with the workmen of like occupation, and said, “Sirs, you know that by this business we have our wealth. <sup>26</sup> You see and hear that not at Ephesus alone, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul has persuaded and turned away many

people, saying that they are no gods that are made with hands. <sup>27</sup> Not only is there danger that this our trade come into disrepute, but also that the temple of the great goddess Artemis will be counted as nothing and her majesty destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worships.”

<sup>28</sup> When they heard this they were filled with anger, and cried out, saying, “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!” <sup>29</sup> The whole city was filled with confusion, and they rushed with one accord into the theatre, having seized Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul’s companions in travel. <sup>30</sup> When Paul wanted to enter into the people, the disciples didn’t allow him. <sup>31</sup> Certain also of the Asiarchs, being his friends, sent to him and begged him not to venture into the theatre. <sup>32</sup> Some therefore cried one thing, and some another, for the assembly was in confusion. Most of them didn’t know why they had come together. <sup>33</sup> They brought Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. Alexander beckoned with his hand, and would have made a defence to the people. <sup>34</sup> But when they perceived that he was a Jew, all with one voice for a time of about two hours cried out, “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!”

<sup>35</sup> When the town clerk had quieted the multitude, he said, “You men of Ephesus, what man is there who doesn’t know that the city of the Ephesians is temple keeper of the great goddess Artemis, and of the image which fell down from Zeus? <sup>36</sup> Seeing then that these things can’t be denied, you ought to be quiet and to do nothing rash. <sup>37</sup> For you have brought these men here, who are neither robbers of temples nor blasphemers of your goddess. <sup>38</sup> If therefore Demetrius and the craftsmen who are with him have a matter against anyone, the courts are open, and there are proconsuls. Let them press charges against one another. <sup>39</sup> But if you seek anything about other matters, it will be settled in the regular assembly. <sup>40</sup> For indeed we are in danger of being accused concerning today’s riot, there being no cause. Concerning it, we wouldn’t be able to give an account of this commotion.” <sup>41</sup> When he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.



**20** After the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, took leave of them, and departed to go into Macedonia. <sup>2</sup> When he had gone through those parts, and had encouraged them with many words, he came into Greece. <sup>3</sup> When he had spent three months there, and a plot was made against him by Jews as he was about to set sail for Syria, he determined to return through Macedonia. <sup>4</sup> These accompanied him as far as Asia: Sopater of Beroea; Aristarchus and Secundus of the Thessalonians; Gaius of Derbe; Timothy; and Tychicus and Trophimus of Asia. <sup>5</sup> But these had gone ahead, and were waiting for us at Troas. <sup>6</sup> We sailed away from Philippi after the days of Unleavened Bread, and came to them at Troas in five days, where we stayed seven days.

<sup>7</sup> On the first day of the week, when the disciples were gathered together to break bread, Paul talked with them, intending to depart on the next day, and continued his speech until midnight. <sup>8</sup> There were many lights in the upper room where we were gathered together. <sup>9</sup> A certain young man named Eutychus sat in the window, weighed down with deep sleep. As Paul spoke still longer, being weighed down by his sleep, he fell down from the third floor and was taken up dead. <sup>10</sup> Paul went down and fell upon him, and embracing him said, "Don't be troubled, for his life is in him."

<sup>11</sup> When he had gone up, and had broken bread and eaten, and had talked with them a long while, even until break of day, he departed. <sup>12</sup> They brought the boy in alive, and were greatly comforted.

<sup>13</sup> But we, going ahead to the ship, set sail for Assos, intending to take Paul aboard there; for he had so arranged, intending himself to go by land. <sup>14</sup> When he met us at Assos, we took him aboard, and came to Mitylene. <sup>15</sup> Sailing from there, we came the following day opposite Chios. The next day we touched at Samos and stayed at Trogyllium, and the day after we came to Miletus. <sup>16</sup> For Paul had determined to sail past Ephesus, that he might not have to spend time in Asia; for he was hastening, if it were possible for him, to be in Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost.

<sup>17</sup> From Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called to himself the elders of the assembly. <sup>18</sup> When they had come to him, he said to them, “You yourselves know, from the first day that I set foot in Asia, how I was with you all the time, <sup>19</sup> serving the Lord with all humility, with many tears, and with trials which happened to me by the plots of the Jews; <sup>20</sup> how I didn’t shrink from declaring to you anything that was profitable, teaching you publicly and from house to house, <sup>21</sup> testifying both to Jews and to Greeks repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus. <sup>22</sup> Now, behold, I go bound by the Spirit to Jerusalem, not knowing what will happen to me there; <sup>23</sup> except that the Holy Spirit testifies in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions wait for me. <sup>24</sup> But these things don’t count; nor do I hold my life dear to myself, so that I may finish my race with joy, and the ministry which I received from the Lord Jesus, to fully testify to the Good News of the grace of God.

<sup>25</sup> “Now, behold, I know that you all, among whom I went about preaching God’s Kingdom, will see my face no more. <sup>26</sup> Therefore I testify to you today that I am clean from the blood of all men, <sup>27</sup> for I didn’t shrink from declaring to you the whole counsel of God. <sup>28</sup> Take heed, therefore, to yourselves, and to all the flock, in which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the assembly of the Lord and [c](#) God which he purchased with his own blood. <sup>29</sup> For I know that after my departure, vicious wolves will enter in among you, not sparing the flock. <sup>30</sup> Men will arise from among your own selves, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after them. <sup>31</sup> Therefore watch, remembering that for a period of three years I didn’t cease to admonish everyone night and day with tears. <sup>32</sup> Now, brothers, I entrust you to God and to the word of his grace, which is able to build up, and to give you the inheritance among all those who are sanctified. <sup>33</sup> I coveted no one’s silver, gold, or clothing. <sup>34</sup> You yourselves know that these hands served my necessities, and those who were with me. <sup>35</sup> In all things I gave you an example, that so labouring you ought to help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, that he himself said, ‘It is more blessed to give than to receive.’”

<sup>36</sup> When he had spoken these things, he knelt down and prayed with them all. <sup>37</sup> They all wept freely, and fell on Paul’s neck and kissed

him,<sup>38</sup> sorrowing most of all because of the word which he had spoken, that they should see his face no more. Then they accompanied him to the ship.

**21** When we had departed from them and had set sail, we came with a straight course to Cos, and the next day to Rhodes, and from there to Patara.<sup>2</sup> Having found a ship crossing over to Phoenicia, we went aboard, and set sail.<sup>3</sup> When we had come in sight of Cyprus, leaving it on the left hand, we sailed to Syria and landed at Tyre, for the ship was there to unload her cargo.<sup>4</sup> Having found disciples, we stayed there seven days. These said to Paul through the Spirit that he should not go up to Jerusalem.<sup>5</sup> When those days were over, we departed and went on our journey. They all, with wives and children, brought us on our way until we were out of the city. Kneeling down on the beach, we prayed.<sup>6</sup> After saying goodbye to each other, we went on board the ship, and they returned home again.

<sup>7</sup>When we had finished the voyage from Tyre, we arrived at Ptolemais. We greeted the brothers and stayed with them one day.<sup>8</sup> On the next day, we who were Paul's companions departed, and came to Caesarea.

We entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven, and stayed with him.<sup>9</sup> Now this man had four virgin daughters who prophesied.<sup>10</sup> As we stayed there some days, a certain prophet named Agabus came down from Judea.<sup>11</sup> Coming to us and taking Paul's belt, he bound his own feet and hands, and said, "The Holy Spirit says: 'So the Jews at Jerusalem will bind the man who owns this belt, and will deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.'"

<sup>12</sup>When we heard these things, both we and the people of that place begged him not to go up to Jerusalem.<sup>13</sup> Then Paul answered, "What are you doing, weeping and breaking my heart? For I am ready not only to be bound, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus."

<sup>14</sup> When he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, “The Lord’s will be done.”

<sup>15</sup> After these days we took up our baggage and went up to Jerusalem. <sup>16</sup> Some of the disciples from Caesarea also went with us, bringing one Mnason of Cyprus, an early disciple, with whom we would stay.

<sup>17</sup> When we had come to Jerusalem, the brothers received us gladly. <sup>18</sup> The day following, Paul went in with us to James; and all the elders were present. <sup>19</sup> When he had greeted them, he reported one by one the things which God had worked among the Gentiles through his ministry. <sup>20</sup> They, when they heard it, glorified God. They said to him, “You see, brother, how many thousands there are among the Jews of those who have believed, and they are all zealous for the law. <sup>21</sup> They have been informed about you, that you teach all the Jews who are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, telling them not to circumcise their children and not to walk after the customs. <sup>22</sup> What then? The assembly must certainly meet, for they will hear that you have come. <sup>23</sup> Therefore do what we tell you. We have four men who have taken a vow. <sup>24</sup> Take them and purify yourself with them, and pay their expenses for them, that they may shave their heads. Then all will know that there is no truth in the things that they have been informed about you, but that you yourself also walk keeping the law. <sup>25</sup> But concerning the Gentiles who believe, we have written our decision that they should observe no such thing, except that they should keep themselves from food offered to idols, from blood, from strangled things, and from sexual immorality.”

<sup>26</sup> Then Paul took the men, and the next day purified himself and went with them into the temple, declaring the fulfilment of the days of purification, until the offering was offered for every one of them. <sup>27</sup> When the seven days were almost completed, the Jews from Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the multitude and laid hands on him, <sup>28</sup> crying out, “Men of Israel, help! This is the man who teaches all men everywhere against the people, and the law, and this place. Moreover, he also brought Greeks into the

temple, and has defiled this holy place!” <sup>29</sup> For they had seen Trophimus, the Ephesian, with him in the city, and they supposed that Paul had brought him into the temple.

<sup>30</sup> All the city was moved and the people ran together. They seized Paul and dragged him out of the temple. Immediately the doors were shut. <sup>31</sup> As they were trying to kill him, news came up to the commanding officer of the regiment that all Jerusalem was in an uproar. <sup>32</sup> Immediately he took soldiers and centurions and ran down to them. They, when they saw the chief captain and the soldiers, stopped beating Paul. <sup>33</sup> Then the commanding officer came near, arrested him, commanded him to be bound with two chains, and inquired who he was and what he had done. <sup>34</sup> Some shouted one thing, and some another, among the crowd. When he couldn’t find out the truth because of the noise, he commanded him to be brought into the barracks.

<sup>35</sup> When he came to the stairs, he was carried by the soldiers because of the violence of the crowd; <sup>36</sup> for the multitude of the people followed after, crying out, “Away with him!” <sup>37</sup> As Paul was about to be brought into the barracks, he asked the commanding officer, “May I speak to you?”

He said, “Do you know Greek? <sup>38</sup> Aren’t you then the Egyptian, who before these days stirred up to sedition and led out into the wilderness the four thousand men of the Assassins?”

<sup>39</sup> But Paul said, “I am a Jew, from Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of no insignificant city. I beg you, allow me to speak to the people.”

<sup>40</sup> When he had given him permission, Paul, standing on the stairs, beckoned with his hand to the people. When there was a great silence, he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, saying,

**22** “Brothers and fathers, listen to the defence which I now make to you.”

<sup>2</sup> When they heard that he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, they were even more quiet. He said, <sup>3</sup> “I am indeed a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, instructed according to the strict tradition of the law of our fathers, being zealous for God, even as you all are today. <sup>4</sup> I persecuted this Way to the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women, <sup>5</sup> as also the high priest and all the council of the elders testify, from whom also I received letters to the brothers, and travelled to Damascus to bring them also who were there to Jerusalem in bonds to be punished. <sup>6</sup> As I made my journey, and came close to Damascus, about noon, suddenly a great light shone around me from the sky. <sup>7</sup> I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me, ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?’ <sup>8</sup> I answered, ‘Who are you, Lord?’ He said to me, ‘I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom you persecute.’

<sup>9</sup> “Those who were with me indeed saw the light and were afraid, but they didn’t understand the voice of him who spoke to me. <sup>10</sup> I said, ‘What shall I do, Lord?’ The Lord said to me, ‘Arise, and go into Damascus. There you will be told about all things which are appointed for you to do.’ <sup>11</sup> When I couldn’t see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of those who were with me, I came into Damascus. <sup>12</sup> One Ananias, a devout man according to the law, well reported of by all the Jews who lived in Damascus, <sup>13</sup> came to me, and standing by me said to me, ‘Brother Saul, receive your sight!’ In that very hour I looked up at him. <sup>14</sup> He said, ‘The God of our fathers has appointed you to know his will, and to see the Righteous One, and to hear a voice from his mouth. <sup>15</sup> For you will be a witness for him to all men of what you have seen and heard. <sup>16</sup> Now why do you wait? Arise, be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.’

<sup>17</sup> “When I had returned to Jerusalem, and while I prayed in the temple, I fell into a trance, <sup>18</sup> and saw him saying to me, ‘Hurry and get out of Jerusalem quickly, because they will not receive testimony concerning me from you.’ <sup>19</sup> I said, ‘Lord, they themselves know that I imprisoned and beat in every synagogue those who believed in you. <sup>20</sup> When the blood of Stephen, your

witness, was shed, I also was standing by, consenting to his death, and guarding the cloaks of those who killed him.’

<sup>21</sup> “He said to me, ‘Depart, for I will send you out far from here to the Gentiles.’”

<sup>22</sup> They listened to him until he said that; then they lifted up their voice and said, “Rid the earth of this fellow, for he isn’t fit to live!”

<sup>23</sup> As they cried out, threw off their cloaks, and threw dust into the air, <sup>24</sup> the commanding officer commanded him to be brought into the barracks, ordering him to be examined by scourging, that he might know for what crime they shouted against him like that. <sup>25</sup> When they had tied him up with thongs, Paul asked the centurion who stood by, “Is it lawful for you to scourge a man who is a Roman, and not found guilty?”

<sup>26</sup> When the centurion heard it, he went to the commanding officer and told him, “Watch what you are about to do, for this man is a Roman!”

<sup>27</sup> The commanding officer came and asked him, “Tell me, are you a Roman?”

He said, “Yes.”

<sup>28</sup> The commanding officer answered, “I bought my citizenship for a great price.”

Paul said, “But I was born a Roman.”

<sup>29</sup> Immediately those who were about to examine him departed from him, and the commanding officer also was afraid when he realized that he was a Roman, because he had bound him. <sup>30</sup> But on the next day, desiring to know the truth about why he was accused by the Jews, he freed him from the bonds, and commanded the chief priests and all the council to come together, and brought Paul down and set him before them.

**23** Paul, looking steadfastly at the council, said, “Brothers, I have lived before God in all good conscience until today.”

<sup>2</sup> The high priest, Ananias, commanded those who stood by him to strike him on the mouth.

<sup>3</sup> Then Paul said to him, “God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! Do you sit to judge me according to the law, and command me to be struck contrary to the law?”

<sup>4</sup> Those who stood by said, “Do you malign God’s high priest?”

<sup>5</sup> Paul said, “I didn’t know, brothers, that he was high priest. For it is written, ‘You shall not speak evil of a ruler of your people.’” [Exodus 22:28](#) <sup>6</sup> But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, “Men and brothers, I am a Pharisee, a son of Pharisees. Concerning the hope and resurrection of the dead I am being judged!”

<sup>7</sup> When he had said this, an argument arose between the Pharisees and Sadducees, and the crowd was divided. <sup>8</sup> For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, nor angel, nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess all of these. <sup>9</sup> A great clamour arose, and some of the scribes of the Pharisees’ part stood up, and contended, saying, “We find no evil in this man. But if a spirit or angel has spoken to him, let’s not fight against God!”

<sup>10</sup> When a great argument arose, the commanding officer, fearing that Paul would be torn in pieces by them, commanded the soldiers to go down and take him by force from among them, and bring him into the barracks.

<sup>11</sup> The following night, the Lord stood by him and said, “Cheer up, Paul, for as you have testified about me at Jerusalem, so you must testify also at Rome.”

<sup>12</sup> When it was day, some of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor



drink until they had killed Paul. <sup>13</sup> There were more than forty people who had made this conspiracy. <sup>14</sup> They came to the chief priests and the elders, and said, “We have bound ourselves under a great curse to taste nothing until we have killed Paul. <sup>15</sup> Now therefore, you with the council inform the commanding officer that he should bring him down to you tomorrow, as though you were going to judge his case more exactly. We are ready to kill him before he comes near.”

<sup>16</sup> But Paul’s sister’s son heard they were lying in wait, and he came and entered into the barracks and told Paul. <sup>17</sup> Paul summoned one of the centurions, and said, “Bring this young man to the commanding officer, for he has something to tell him.”

<sup>18</sup> So he took him, and brought him to the commanding officer, and said, “Paul, the prisoner, summoned me and asked me to bring this young man to you. He has something to tell you.”

<sup>19</sup> The commanding officer took him by the hand, and going aside, asked him privately, “What is it that you have to tell me?”

<sup>20</sup> He said, “The Jews have agreed to ask you to bring Paul down to the council tomorrow, as though intending to inquire somewhat more accurately concerning him. <sup>21</sup> Therefore don’t yield to them, for more than forty men lie in wait for him, who have bound themselves under a curse to neither eat nor drink until they have killed him. Now they are ready, looking for the promise from you.”

<sup>22</sup> So the commanding officer let the young man go, charging him, “Tell no one that you have revealed these things to me.” <sup>23</sup> He called to himself two of the centurions, and said, “Prepare two hundred soldiers to go as far as Caesarea, with seventy horsemen, and two hundred men armed with spears, at the third hour of the night.” <sup>24</sup> He asked them to provide animals, that they might set Paul on one, and bring him safely to Felix the governor. <sup>25</sup> He wrote a letter like this:

<sup>26</sup> “Claudius Lysias to the most excellent governor Felix: Greetings.

<sup>27</sup> “This man was seized by the Jews, and was about to be killed by them, when I came with the soldiers and rescued him, having learned that he was a Roman. <sup>28</sup> Desiring to know the cause why they accused him, I brought him down to their council. <sup>29</sup> I found him to be accused about questions of their law, but not to be charged with anything worthy of death or of imprisonment. <sup>30</sup> When I was told that the Jews lay in wait for the man, I sent him to you immediately, charging his accusers also to bring their accusations against him before you. Farewell.”

<sup>31</sup> So the soldiers, carrying out their orders, took Paul and brought him by night to Antipatris. <sup>32</sup> But on the next day they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the barracks. <sup>33</sup> When they came to Caesarea and delivered the letter to the governor, they also presented Paul to him. <sup>34</sup> When the governor had read it, he asked what province he was from. When he understood that he was from Cilicia, he said, <sup>35</sup> “I will hear you fully when your accusers also arrive.” He commanded that he be kept in Herod’s palace.

**24** After five days, the high priest, Ananias, came down with certain elders and an orator, one Tertullus. They informed the governor against Paul. <sup>2</sup> When he was called, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, “Seeing that by you we enjoy much peace, and that prosperity is coming to this nation by your foresight, <sup>3</sup> we accept it in all ways and in all places, most excellent Felix, with all thankfulness. <sup>4</sup> But that I don’t delay you, I entreat you to bear with us and hear a few words. <sup>5</sup> For we have found this man to be a plague, an instigator of insurrections among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes. <sup>6</sup> He even tried to profane the temple, and we arrested him. <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> By examining him yourself you may ascertain all these things of which we accuse him.”

<sup>9</sup> The Jews also joined in the attack, affirming that these things were so. <sup>10</sup> When the governor had beckoned to him to speak, Paul answered, “Because I know that you have been a judge of this nation for many years, I cheerfully make my defence, <sup>11</sup> seeing that you can verify that it is not more than twelve days since I went up to worship

at Jerusalem. <sup>12</sup> In the temple they didn't find me disputing with anyone or stirring up a crowd, either in the synagogues, or in the city. <sup>13</sup> Nor can they prove to you the things of which they now accuse me. <sup>14</sup> But this I confess to you, that after the Way, which they call a sect, so I serve the God of our fathers, believing all things which are according to the law, and which are written in the prophets; <sup>15</sup> having hope toward God, which these also themselves look for, that there will be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust. <sup>16</sup> In this I also practice always having a conscience void of offence toward God and men. <sup>17</sup> Now after some years, I came to bring gifts for the needy to my nation, and offerings; <sup>18</sup> amid which certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, not with a mob, nor with turmoil. <sup>19</sup> They ought to have been here before you, and to make accusation, if they had anything against me. <sup>20</sup> Or else let these men themselves say what injustice they found in me when I stood before the council, <sup>21</sup> unless it is for this one thing that I cried standing among them, 'Concerning the resurrection of the dead I am being judged before you today!'"

<sup>22</sup> But Felix, having more exact knowledge concerning the Way, deferred them, saying, "When Lysias, the commanding officer, comes down, I will decide your case." <sup>23</sup> He ordered the centurion that Paul should be kept in custody, and should have some privileges, and not to forbid any of his friends to serve him or to visit him. <sup>24</sup> But after some days, Felix came with Drusilla, his wife, who was a Jewess, and sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ Jesus. <sup>25</sup> As he reasoned about righteousness, self-control, and the judgment to come, Felix was terrified, and answered, "Go your way for this time, and when it is convenient for me, I will summon you." <sup>26</sup> Meanwhile, he also hoped that money would be given to him by Paul, that he might release him. Therefore also he sent for him more often and talked with him. <sup>27</sup> But when two years were fulfilled, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus, and desiring to gain favour with the Jews, Felix left Paul in bonds.

**25** Festus therefore, having come into the province, after three days went up to Jerusalem from Caesarea. <sup>2</sup> Then the high priest and the principal men of the Jews informed him against Paul, and they begged him, <sup>3</sup> asking a favour against him, that he would summon

him to Jerusalem; plotting to kill him on the way. <sup>4</sup> However Festus answered that Paul should be kept in custody at Caesarea, and that he himself was about to depart shortly. <sup>5</sup> “Let them therefore”, he said, “that are in power among you go down with me, and if there is anything wrong in the man, let them accuse him.”

<sup>6</sup> When he had stayed among them more than ten days, he went down to Caesarea, and on the next day he sat on the judgment seat, and commanded Paul to be brought. <sup>7</sup> When he had come, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem stood around him, bringing against him many and grievous charges which they could not prove, <sup>8</sup> while he said in his defence, “Neither against the law of the Jews, nor against the temple, nor against Caesar, have I sinned at all.”

<sup>9</sup> But Festus, desiring to gain favour with the Jews, answered Paul and said, “Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem, and be judged by me there concerning these things?”

<sup>10</sup> But Paul said, “I am standing before Caesar’s judgment seat, where I ought to be tried. I have done no wrong to the Jews, as you also know very well. <sup>11</sup> For if I have done wrong and have committed anything worthy of death, I don’t refuse to die; but if none of those things is true that they accuse me of, no one can give me up to them. I appeal to Caesar!”

<sup>12</sup> Then Festus, when he had conferred with the council, answered, “You have appealed to Caesar. To Caesar you shall go.”

<sup>13</sup> Now when some days had passed, King Agrippa and Bernice arrived at Caesarea, and greeted Festus. <sup>14</sup> As he stayed there many days, Festus laid Paul’s case before the king, saying, “There is a certain man left a prisoner by Felix; <sup>15</sup> about whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, asking for a sentence against him. <sup>16</sup> I answered them that it is not the custom of the Romans to give up any man to destruction before the accused has met the accusers face to face and has had opportunity to make his defence concerning the matter laid against him. <sup>17</sup> When therefore they had come together here, I didn’t delay,

but on the next day sat on the judgment seat and commanded the man to be brought. <sup>18</sup> When the accusers stood up, they brought no charges against him of such things as I supposed; <sup>19</sup> but had certain questions against him about their own religion, and about one Jesus, who was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. <sup>20</sup> Being perplexed how to inquire concerning these things, I asked whether he was willing to go to Jerusalem and there be judged concerning these matters. <sup>21</sup> But when Paul had appealed to be kept for the decision of the emperor, I commanded him to be kept until I could send him to Caesar.”

<sup>22</sup> Agrippa said to Festus, “I also would like to hear the man myself.”

“Tomorrow,” he said, “you shall hear him.”

<sup>23</sup> So on the next day, when Agrippa and Bernice had come with great pomp, and they had entered into the place of hearing with the commanding officers and the principal men of the city, at the command of Festus, Paul was brought in. <sup>24</sup> Festus said, “King Agrippa, and all men who are here present with us, you see this man about whom all the multitude of the Jews petitioned me, both at Jerusalem and here, crying that he ought not to live any longer. <sup>25</sup> But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and as he himself appealed to the emperor I determined to send him, <sup>26</sup> of whom I have no certain thing to write to my lord. Therefore I have brought him out before you, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after examination, I may have something to write. <sup>27</sup> For it seems to me unreasonable, in sending a prisoner, not to also specify the charges against him.”

**26** Agrippa said to Paul, “You may speak for yourself.”

Then Paul stretched out his hand, and made his defence. <sup>2</sup> “I think myself happy, King Agrippa, that I am to make my defence before you today concerning all the things that I am accused by the Jews, <sup>3</sup> especially because you are expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews. Therefore I beg you to hear me patiently.

<sup>4</sup>“Indeed, all the Jews know my way of life from my youth up, which was from the beginning among my own nation and at Jerusalem; <sup>5</sup> having known me from the first, if they are willing to testify, that after the strictest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee. <sup>6</sup> Now I stand here to be judged for the hope of the promise made by God to our fathers, <sup>7</sup> which our twelve tribes, earnestly serving night and day, hope to attain. Concerning this hope I am accused by the Jews, King Agrippa! <sup>8</sup> Why is it judged incredible with you, if God does raise the dead?

<sup>9</sup>“I myself most certainly thought that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth. <sup>10</sup> I also did this in Jerusalem. I both shut up many of the saints in prisons, having received authority from the chief priests, and when they were put to death I gave my vote against them. <sup>11</sup> Punishing them often in all the synagogues, I tried to make them blaspheme. Being exceedingly enraged against them, I persecuted them even to foreign cities.

<sup>12</sup>“Whereupon as I travelled to Damascus with the authority and commission from the chief priests, <sup>13</sup> at noon, O king, I saw on the way a light from the sky, brighter than the sun, shining around me and those who travelled with me. <sup>14</sup> When we had all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice saying to me in the Hebrew language, ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? It is hard for you to kick against the goads.’

<sup>15</sup>“I said, ‘Who are you, Lord?’

“He said, ‘I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting. <sup>16</sup> But arise, and stand on your feet, for I have appeared to you for this purpose: to appoint you a servant and a witness both of the things which you have seen, and of the things which I will reveal to you; <sup>17</sup> delivering you from the people, and from the Gentiles, to whom I send you, <sup>18</sup> to open their eyes, that they may turn from darkness to light and from the power of Satan to God, that they may receive remission of sins and an inheritance among those who are sanctified by faith in me.’

<sup>19</sup> “Therefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision, <sup>20</sup> but declared first to them of Damascus, at Jerusalem, and throughout all the country of Judea, and also to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, doing works worthy of repentance. <sup>21</sup> For this reason the Jews seized me in the temple and tried to kill me. <sup>22</sup> Having therefore obtained the help that is from God, I stand to this day testifying both to small and great, saying nothing but what the prophets and Moses said would happen, <sup>23</sup> how the Christ must suffer, and how, by the resurrection of the dead, he would be first to proclaim light both to these people and to the Gentiles.”

<sup>24</sup> As he thus made his defence, Festus said with a loud voice, “Paul, you are crazy! Your great learning is driving you insane!”

<sup>25</sup> But he said, “I am not crazy, most excellent Festus, but boldly declare words of truth and reasonableness. <sup>26</sup> For the king knows of these things, to whom also I speak freely. For I am persuaded that none of these things is hidden from him, for this has not been done in a corner. <sup>27</sup> King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know that you believe.”

<sup>28</sup> Agrippa said to Paul, “With a little persuasion are you trying to make me a Christian?”

<sup>29</sup> Paul said, “I pray to God, that whether with little or with much, not only you, but also all that hear me today, might become such as I am, except for these bonds.”

<sup>30</sup> The king rose up with the governor, and Bernice, and those who sat with them. <sup>31</sup> When they had withdrawn, they spoke to one another, saying, “This man does nothing worthy of death or of bonds.” <sup>32</sup> Agrippa said to Festus, “This man might have been set free if he had not appealed to Caesar.”

<sup>27</sup> When it was determined that we should sail for Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners to a centurion named Julius, of the Augustan band. <sup>2</sup> Embarking in a ship of Adramyttium,

which was about to sail to places on the coast of Asia, we put to sea, Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. <sup>3</sup> The next day, we touched at Sidon. Julius treated Paul kindly, and gave him permission to go to his friends and refresh himself. <sup>4</sup> Putting to sea from there, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the winds were contrary. <sup>5</sup> When we had sailed across the sea which is off Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lycia. <sup>6</sup> There the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing for Italy, and he put us on board. <sup>7</sup> When we had sailed slowly many days, and had come with difficulty opposite Cnidus, the wind not allowing us further, we sailed under the lee of Crete, opposite Salmone. <sup>8</sup> With difficulty sailing along it we came to a certain place called Fair Havens, near the city of Lasea.

<sup>9</sup> When much time had passed and the voyage was now dangerous, because the Fast had now already gone by, Paul admonished them <sup>10</sup> and said to them, “Sirs, I perceive that the voyage will be with injury and much loss, not only of the cargo and the ship, but also of our lives.” <sup>11</sup> But the centurion gave more heed to the master and to the owner of the ship than to those things which were spoken by Paul. <sup>12</sup> Because the haven was not suitable to winter in, the majority advised going to sea from there, if by any means they could reach Phoenix, and winter there, which is a port of Crete, looking southwest and northwest.

<sup>13</sup> When the south wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, they weighed anchor and sailed along Crete, close to shore. <sup>14</sup> But before long, a stormy wind beat down from shore, which is called Euroclydon. <sup>15</sup> When the ship was caught and couldn’t face the wind, we gave way to it and were driven along. <sup>16</sup> Running under the lee of a small island called Claudia, we were able, with difficulty, to secure the boat. <sup>17</sup> After they had hoisted it up, they used cables to help reinforce the ship. Fearing that they would run aground on the Syrtis sand bars, they lowered the sea anchor, and so were driven along. <sup>18</sup> As we laboured exceedingly with the storm, the next day they began to throw things overboard. <sup>19</sup> On the third day, they threw out the ship’s tackle with their own hands. <sup>20</sup> When neither sun nor stars shone on us for many



days, and no small storm pressed on us, all hope that we would be saved was now taken away.

<sup>21</sup> When they had been long without food, Paul stood up in the middle of them, and said, “Sirs, you should have listened to me, and not have set sail from Crete and have gotten this injury and loss. <sup>22</sup> Now I exhort you to cheer up, for there will be no loss of life among you, but only of the ship. <sup>23</sup> For there stood by me this night an angel, belonging to the God whose I am and whom I serve, <sup>24</sup> saying, ‘Don’t be afraid, Paul. You must stand before Caesar. Behold, God has granted you all those who sail with you.’ <sup>25</sup> Therefore, sirs, cheer up! For I believe God, that it will be just as it has been spoken to me. <sup>26</sup> But we must run aground on a certain island.”

<sup>27</sup> But when the fourteenth night had come, as we were driven back and forth in the Adriatic Sea, about midnight the sailors surmised that they were drawing near to some land. <sup>28</sup> They took soundings, and found twenty fathoms. After a little while, they took soundings again, and found fifteen fathoms. <sup>29</sup> Fearing that we would run aground on rocky ground, they let go four anchors from the stern, and wished for daylight. <sup>30</sup> As the sailors were trying to flee out of the ship, and had lowered the boat into the sea, pretending that they would lay out anchors from the bow, <sup>31</sup> Paul said to the centurion and to the soldiers, “Unless these stay in the ship, you can’t be saved.” <sup>32</sup> Then the soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat, and let it fall off.

<sup>33</sup> While the day was coming on, Paul begged them all to take some food, saying, “Today is the fourteenth day that you wait and continue fasting, having taken nothing. <sup>34</sup> Therefore I beg you to take some food; for this is for your safety; for not a hair will perish from any of your heads.” <sup>35</sup> When he had said this, and had taken bread, he gave thanks to God in the presence of all, then he broke it and began to eat. <sup>36</sup> Then they all cheered up, and they also took food. <sup>37</sup> In all, we were two hundred seventy-six souls on the ship. <sup>38</sup> When they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, throwing out the wheat into the sea. <sup>39</sup> When it was day, they didn’t

recognize the land, but they noticed a certain bay with a beach, and they decided to try to drive the ship onto it. <sup>40</sup> Casting off the anchors, they left them in the sea, at the same time untying the rudder ropes. Hoisting up the foresail to the wind, they made for the beach. <sup>41</sup> But coming to a place where two seas met, they ran the vessel aground. The bow struck and remained immovable, but the stern began to break up by the violence of the waves.

<sup>42</sup> The soldiers' counsel was to kill the prisoners, so that none of them would swim out and escape. <sup>43</sup> But the centurion, desiring to save Paul, stopped them from their purpose, and commanded that those who could swim should throw themselves overboard first to go toward the land; <sup>44</sup> and the rest should follow, some on planks, and some on other things from the ship. So they all escaped safely to the land.

**28** When we had escaped, then they learned that the island was called Malta. <sup>2</sup> The natives showed us uncommon kindness; for they kindled a fire and received us all, because of the present rain and because of the cold. <sup>3</sup> But when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks and laid them on the fire, a viper came out because of the heat, and fastened on his hand. <sup>4</sup> When the natives saw the creature hanging from his hand, they said to one another, "No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he has escaped from the sea, yet Justice has not allowed to live." <sup>5</sup> However he shook off the creature into the fire, and wasn't harmed. <sup>6</sup> But they expected that he would have swollen or fallen down dead suddenly, but when they watched for a long time and saw nothing bad happen to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god.

<sup>7</sup> Now in the neighbourhood of that place were lands belonging to the chief man of the island, named Publius, who received us, and courteously entertained us for three days. <sup>8</sup> The father of Publius lay sick of fever and dysentery. Paul entered in to him, prayed, and laying his hands on him, healed him. <sup>9</sup> Then when this was done, the rest also who had diseases in the island came and were cured. <sup>10</sup> They also honoured us with many honours, and when we sailed, they put on board the things that we needed.

<sup>11</sup> After three months, we set sail in a ship of Alexandria which had wintered in the island, whose sign was “The Twin Brothers.” <sup>12</sup> Touching at Syracuse, we stayed there three days. <sup>13</sup> From there we circled around and arrived at Rhegium. After one day, a south wind sprang up, and on the second day we came to Puteoli, <sup>14</sup> where we found brothers, and were entreated to stay with them for seven days. So we came to Rome. <sup>15</sup> From there the brothers, when they heard of us, came to meet us as far as The Market of Appius and The Three Taverns. When Paul saw them, he thanked God and took courage. <sup>16</sup> When we entered into Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard, but Paul was allowed to stay by himself with the soldier who guarded him.

<sup>17</sup> After three days Paul called together those who were the leaders of the Jews. When they had come together, he said to them, “I, brothers, though I had done nothing against the people or the customs of our fathers, still was delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans, <sup>18</sup> who, when they had examined me, desired to set me free, because there was no cause of death in me. <sup>19</sup> But when the Jews spoke against it, I was constrained to appeal to Caesar, not that I had anything about which to accuse my nation. <sup>20</sup> For this cause therefore I asked to see you and to speak with you. For because of the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.”

<sup>21</sup> They said to him, “We neither received letters from Judea concerning you, nor did any of the brothers come here and report or speak any evil of you. <sup>22</sup> But we desire to hear from you what you think. For, as concerning this sect, it is known to us that everywhere it is spoken against.”

<sup>23</sup> When they had appointed him a day, many people came to him at his lodging. He explained to them, testifying about God’s Kingdom, and persuading them concerning Jesus, both from the law of Moses and from the prophets, from morning until evening. <sup>24</sup> Some believed the things which were spoken, and some disbelieved. <sup>25</sup> When they didn’t agree among themselves, they

departed after Paul had spoken one word, “The Holy Spirit spoke rightly through Isaiah the prophet to our fathers, <sup>26</sup> saying,

‘Go to this people and say,  
in hearing, you will hear,  
but will in no way understand.

In seeing, you will see,  
but will in no way perceive.

<sup>27</sup> For this people’s heart has grown callous.

Their ears are dull of hearing.

Their eyes they have closed.

Lest they should see with their eyes,

hear with their ears,

understand with their heart,

and would turn again,

then I would heal them.’

<sup>28</sup> “Be it known therefore to you, that the salvation of God is sent to the nations, and they will listen.”<sup>29</sup> When he had said these words, the Jews departed, having a great dispute among themselves.

<sup>30</sup> Paul stayed two whole years in his own rented house and received all who were coming to him, <sup>31</sup> preaching God’s Kingdom, and teaching the things concerning the Lord Jesus Christ with all boldness, without hindrance.

End of The Acts of The Apostles.

## 7. THE PREDETERMINED PLAN OF GOD

Prophecies of God # 61-77.

Here is a prophecy of God. It tells us that there is only one God, who declares the end from the beginning. God will do whatever he wants to do, and there is nothing that could stand against the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

### **(Prophecy # 61.)**

<sup>9</sup> *Remember the former things of old:*

*for I am God, and there is no other.*

*I am God, and there is none like me.*

<sup>10</sup> *I declare the end from the beginning,*

*and from ancient times things that are not yet done.*

*I say: My counsel will stand,*

*and I will do all that I please.* Isaiah 46:9-10. C.700 BC.

God revealed himself to humankind through his prophecies, through his chosen people, the Jews, and the land which he gave to the Jews. This is the only piece of land which God gave to anyone in the history of the world. This land is known today as the Nation of Israel, and its capital city is Jerusalem. Anyone as old as I am, has been watching the news on television about the troubles and war against Israel for the past 70 years. The important point for anyone looking at the history of this land and contemplating who the rightful owner of the land is. The answer is God. For God gave the land to the Jews to reveal his one and only Son Jesus Christ to the world. Not only is it Jesus Christ who gives us the right to become Children of God, but the prophecies of God tell us that Jesus Christ is going to return to Earth. And it is to the Jews in the land of Israel he is returning to, and will make Jerusalem not just the capital city of Israel, but the capital city of the world, the capital city of the Kingdom of God. The Lord God of Heaven and Earth.

In this chapter, I want to demonstrate how the predetermined plan and purpose of God unfold through history. Here we begin with a promise and prophecy of God to Abraham nearly four thousand years ago, that's 2,000 years before the birth of Jesus Christ.

The promise of God is for Abraham's descendants to be a great nation living in the land that we know today as Israel. The promise of God continues to the end of this age when all the kingdoms of this earth become the kingdoms of our God and of His Christ Jesus. And when Jesus Christ returns from Heaven to Earth, Jesus will return to Jerusalem, and make Jerusalem the capital city of the world, from which God will rule and reign forever.

Then, the predetermined plan and purpose of God for humankind will be fulfilled. For the salvation of humankind through Jesus Christ and from the Kingdom of Heaven here on earth. As Christians have prayed for 2,000 years, a prayer to God that thy kingdom come, thy will be done, here (on earth) as it is in heaven.

But these prophecies of God do not foretell of God delivering His prophecies and then everything going smoothly, without any problems. No, God actually foretells the disasters on the way. So, from the time of Abraham until the return of Jesus Christ, God has forewarned us of the trials and tribulations to come, so that we would never be discouraged but remain faithful to God and His Christ Jesus.

Nearly four thousand years ago, God makes a promise to Abram (whom He later names Abraham). God will give Abraham's descendants the land of Canaan, which was occupied by other tribes. Also, while some of his descendants will be kings of nations, the land of Canaan will be given to his descendants for everlasting possession. This means that no matter what happens in the future, God is giving that land of Canaan to Abraham's descendants who were known as the Hebrews, and who we know today as the Jews.

**(Prophecy # 62.)**

*<sup>18</sup> In that day Yahweh made a covenant with Abram, saying, “I have given this land to your offspring, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates: <sup>19</sup> the land of the Kenites, the Kenizzites, the Kadmonites, <sup>20</sup> the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Rephaim, <sup>21</sup> the Amorites, the Canaanites, the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.”* Genesis 15:18-21. (c. 1,900 B.C.).

**(Prophecy # 63.)**

*<sup>14</sup> I will also judge that nation, whom they will serve. Afterwards they will come out with great wealth;.* Genesis 15:14.

It was some four hundred years later that the Hebrews were living in Egypt as slaves, and another four hundred years before God led His people out of slavery, by His servant Moses. But before the Hebrews left, Moses instructed the Hebrews to ask the Egyptians to give them gold and jewellery, which they did.

*The children of Israel did according to the word of Moses; and they asked of the Egyptians jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and clothing. 36 Yahweh gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians, so that they let them have what they asked. They plundered the Egyptians.* Exodus 12:35-36.

The promise God had made to Abraham God also made to Moses, on the understanding that the people keep the commandments of God.

**(Prophecy # 64.)**

*You shall write them on the door posts of your house and on your gates; 21 that your days and your children’s days may be multiplied in the land which Yahweh swore to your fathers to give them, as the days of the heavens above the earth. 22 For if you shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you— to do them, to love Yahweh your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cling to him— 23 then Yahweh will drive out all these nations from before you, and you shall dispossess nations greater and mightier than*

*yourselves. 24 Every place on which the sole of your foot treads shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even to the western sea shall be your border. Deuteronomy 11:20-24.*

Following the death of Moses God affirms His promise to Joshua, and again reminds them to be obedient to the commandments of God.

**(Prophecy # 65.)**

*I Now after the death of Moses the servant of Yahweh,<sup>1</sup> Yahweh spoke to Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' servant, saying, <sup>2</sup> "Moses my servant is dead. Now therefore arise, go across this Jordan, you and all these people, to the land which I am giving to them, even to the children of Israel. <sup>3</sup> I have given you every place that the sole of your foot will tread on, as I told Moses. <sup>4</sup> From the wilderness and this Lebanon even to the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and to the great sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your border. <sup>5</sup> No man will be able to stand before you all the days of your life. As I was with Moses, so I will be with you. I will not fail you nor forsake you.*

*<sup>6</sup> "Be strong and courageous; for you shall cause this people to inherit the land which I swore to their fathers to give them. <sup>7</sup> Only be strong and very courageous. Be careful to observe to do according to all the law which Moses my servant commanded you. Don't turn from it to the right hand or to the left, that you may have good success wherever you go. <sup>8</sup> This book of the law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night, that you may observe to do according to all that is written in it; for then you shall make your way prosperous, and then you shall have good success. <sup>9</sup> Haven't I commanded you? Be strong and courageous. Don't be afraid. Don't be dismayed, for Yahweh your Go<sup>l</sup> is with you wherever you go."*

*<sup>10</sup> Then Joshua commanded the officers of the people, saying, <sup>11</sup> "Pass through the middle of the camp, and command the*



*people, saying, 'Prepare food; for within three days you are to pass over this Jordan, to go in to possess the land which Yahweh your God gives you to possess.'"* Joshua 1:1-11.

God had made His promise to Abraham nearly a thousand years earlier, and then affirmed it to Moses and now Joshua. And from c.1450 B.C. The Hebrews (who are now known as the Children of Israel) began their military campaign to take the Promised Land of Canaan. But their success and their safety in this Promised Land were dependent on their being obedient to the commandments of God.

When God had given Moses the Ten Commandments (and other laws to follow), God also made it clear how He would bless them for their obedience. But God also made it very clear how He would punish them for their disobedience.

**(Prophecy # 66.)**

*1 " 'You shall make for yourselves no idols, and you shall not raise up a carved image or a pillar, and you shall not place any figured stone in your land, to bow down to it; for I am Yahweh your God. 2*

*" 'You shall keep my Sabbaths, and have reverence for my sanctuary. I am Yahweh.*

*3 " 'If you walk in my statutes and keep my commandments, and do them, 4 then I will give you your rains in their season, and the land shall yield its increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. 5 Your threshing shall continue until the vintage, and the vintage shall continue until the sowing time. You shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely.*

*6 " 'I will give peace in the land, and you shall lie down, and no one will make you afraid. I will remove evil animals out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land.*

*7 You shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. 8 Five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you*

*shall chase ten thousand; and your enemies shall fall before you by the sword.*

*9 “ ‘I will have respect for you, make you fruitful, multiply you, and will establish my covenant with you. 10 You shall eat old supplies long kept, and you shall move out the old because of the new.*

*11 I will set my tent amongst you, and my soul won’t abhor you. 12 I will walk amongst you, and will be your God, and you will be my people. 13 I am Yahweh your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, that you should not be their slaves. I have broken the bars of your yoke, and made you walk upright.*

*14 “ ‘But if you will not listen to me, and will not do all these commandments, 15 and if you shall reject my statutes, and if your soul abhors my ordinances, so that you will not do all my commandments, but break my covenant, 16 I also will do this to you: I will appoint terror over you, even consumption and fever, that shall consume the eyes, and make the soul to pine away. You will sow your seed in vain, for your enemies will eat it.*

*17 I will set my face against you, and you will be struck before your enemies. Those who hate you will rule over you; and you will flee when no one pursues you.*

*18 “ ‘If you in spite of these things will not listen to me, then I will chastise you seven times more for your sins.*

*19 I will break the pride of your power, and I will make your sky like iron, and your soil like bronze. 20 Your strength will be spent in vain; for your land won’t yield its increase, neither will the trees of the land yield their fruit.*

*21 “ ‘If you walk contrary to me, and won’t listen to me, then I will bring seven times more plagues on you according to your sins.*

*22 I will send the wild animals amongst you, which will rob you of*

*your children, destroy your livestock, and make you few in number. Your roads will become desolate. 23 “ ‘If by these things you won’t be turned back to me, but will walk contrary to me,*

*24 then I will also walk contrary to you; and I will strike you, even I, seven times for your sins.*

*25 I will bring a sword upon you that will execute the vengeance of the covenant. You will be gathered together within your cities, and I will send the pestilence amongst you. You will be delivered into the hand of the enemy. 26 When I break your staff of bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver your bread again by weight. You shall eat, and not be satisfied.*

*27 “ ‘If you in spite of this, won’t listen to me, but walk contrary to me, 28 then I will walk contrary to you in wrath. I will also chastise you seven times for your sins.*

*29 You will eat the flesh of your sons, and you will eat the flesh of your daughters. 30 I will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and cast your dead bodies upon the bodies of your idols; and my soul will abhor you. 31 I will lay your cities waste, and will bring your sanctuaries to desolation. I will not take delight in the sweet fragrance of your offerings. 32 I will bring the land into desolation, and your enemies who dwell in it will be astonished at it.*

*33 I will scatter you amongst the nations, and I will draw out the sword after you. Your land will be a desolation, and your cities shall be a waste. 34 Then the land will enjoy its Sabbaths as long as it lies desolate and you are in your enemies’ land. Even then the land will rest and enjoy its Sabbaths. 35 As long as it lies desolate it shall have rest, even the rest which it didn’t have in your Sabbaths when you lived on it.*

*36 “ ‘As for those of you who are left, I will send a faintness into*

*their hearts in the lands of their enemies. The sound of a driven leaf will put them to flight; and they shall flee, as one flees from the sword. They will fall when no one pursues. 37 They will stumble over one another, as it were before the sword, when no one pursues. You 38 You will perish amongst the nations. The land of your enemies will eat you up.*

*39 Those of you who are left will pine away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; and also in the iniquities of their fathers they shall pine away with them.*

*40 " 'If they confess their iniquity and the iniquity of their fathers, in their trespass which they trespassed against me; and also that because they walked contrary to me, 41 I also walked contrary to them, and brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised heart is humbled, and they then accept the punishment of their iniquity, 42 then I will remember my covenant with Jacob, my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham; and I will remember the land. 43 The land also will be left by them, and will enjoy its Sabbaths while it lies desolate without them; and they will accept the punishment of their iniquity because they rejected my ordinances, and their soul abhorred my statutes.*

*44 Yet for all that, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not reject them, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly and to break my covenant with them; for I am Yahweh their God.*

*45 But I will for their sake remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the nations, that I might be their God. I am Yahweh. ' " 46 These are the statutes, ordinances, and laws, which Yahweh made between him and the children of Israel in Mount Sinai by Moses. Leviticus 26:1-46.*

So, we have the blessings of obedience and the curses for disobedience, and then the forgiveness of God when the people

repent of their sins. God also tells the people their punishment will be for seven times. What does that mean?

Well, in biblical prophecy a time is 365 days (1 calendar year) and also in biblical prophecy 1 day can equal one year. So seven times would be 365 days times 7 which equals 2555 days which equals 2555 years.

This means God has warned His people that the penalty for disobedience (with all the terrors that God foretold during that time), will last for 2555 years!

**(Prophecy # 67.)**

Some four hundred years later, King Solomon had built a temple in Jerusalem and God had warned him of marrying wives who were not from his own people of Israel, as they would lead him into worshipping other gods. Solomon then does the very thing that God warned him not to do, and as a result, God tells Solomon of His judgement against him.

In 1 Kings we read of King Solomon's disobedience to God.

*11 Now king Solomon loved many foreign women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians, and Hittites; <sup>2</sup> of the nations concerning which Yahweh said to the children of Israel, "You shall not go among them, neither shall they come among you; for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods." Solomon joined to these in love. <sup>3</sup> He had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines. His wives turned his heart away. <sup>4</sup> When Solomon was old, his wives turned away his heart after other gods; and his heart was not perfect with Yahweh his God, as the heart of David his father was. <sup>5</sup> For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Sidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. <sup>6</sup> Solomon did that which was evil in Yahweh's sight, and didn't go fully after Yahweh, as David his father did. <sup>7</sup> Then Solomon built a high place for Chemosh the abomination of Moab,*

*on the mountain that is before Jerusalem, and for Molech the abomination of the children of Ammon. <sup>8</sup> So he did for all his foreign wives, who burned incense and sacrificed to their gods. <sup>9</sup> Yahweh was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned away from Yahweh, the God of Israel, who had appeared to him twice, <sup>10</sup> and had commanded him concerning this thing, that he should not go after other gods; but he didn't keep that which Yahweh commanded. <sup>11</sup> Therefore Yahweh said to Solomon, "Because this is done by you, and you have not kept my covenant and my statutes, which I have commanded you, I will surely tear the kingdom from you, and will give it to your servant. <sup>12</sup> Nevertheless, I will not do it in your days, for David your father's sake; but I will tear it out of your son's hand. <sup>13</sup> However I will not tear away all the kingdom; but I will give one tribe to your son, for David my servant's sake, and for Jerusalem's sake which I have chosen." 1 Kings 11-13.*

Following the death of Solomon, his son Rehoboam became king but the ten tribes in the north of Israel refused to accept him as their king. From that point, the land of Israel became divided with Israel in the north with Samaria being their capital, and Judah in the south with Jerusalem as its capital. Also, while the Jews in Judah worshipped God in the Temple of Jerusalem, the Jews in Samaria built their own temple in which to worship God.

For the Jews living in Judah, worshipping God at the Temple of Jerusalem and following the Ten Commandments and the laws of Moses. They would have considered the Jews of the ten tribes of Israel, who built their own temple and who married non-Jews and who many would have worshipped idols. They would have considered them to be as bad as the Gentiles (non-Jews).

In 700 B.C. the Assyrians (modern-day northern Iraq) invaded Israel, took them into slavery and dispersed them throughout their kingdom.

In 586 B.C. the Babylonians (modern-day southern Iraq) invaded Judah and took the people into slavery in Babylon. And it was while the Jews were in captivity in Babylon that God gave a prophecy through his servant Ezekiel. What was amazing about this prophecy is not that God said He would bring His people back to the land He promised Abraham, Moses and Joshua. But where previously they were a bitterly divided people in the two kingdoms of Israel and Judah, They would return as one people and as one kingdom. So, while the Jews who heard about this prophecy of God while in captivity of Babylon. It must have been wonderful and encouraging news, but they must have thought it impossible that Judah and Israel would be one united kingdom again. Here is the prophecy.

**(Prophecy # 68.)**

*Yahweh's word came again to me, saying, 16 "You, son of man, take one stick and write on it, 'For Judah, and for the children of Israel his companions.' Then take another stick, and write on it, 'For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim, and for all the house of Israel his companions.' 17 Then join them for yourself to one another into one stick, that they may become one in your hand. 18 "When the children of your people speak to you, saying, 'Won't you show us what you mean by these?' 19 tell them, 'Yahweh says: "Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his companions; and I will put them with it, with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they will be one in my hand. 20 The sticks on which you write will be in your hand before their eyes." ' 21 Say to them, 'The Lord Yahweh says: "Behold, I will take the children of Israel from amongst the nations where they have gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land. 22 I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel. One king will be king to them all. They will no longer be two nations. They won't be divided into two kingdoms any more at all. 23 They won't defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions; but I will save them out of all their dwelling places in which they have sinned, and will cleanse them. So they will be my people, and I will be their God. 24 " ' "My servant David will be*

*king over them. They all will have one shepherd. They will also walk in my ordinances and observe my statutes, and do them. 25 They will dwell in the land that I have given to Jacob my servant, in which your fathers lived. They will dwell therein, they, and their children, and their children's children, forever. David my servant will be their prince forever. 26 Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them. It will be an everlasting covenant with them. I will place them, multiply them, and will set my sanctuary amongst them forever more. 27 My tent also will be with them. I will be their God, and they will be my people. 28 The nations will know that I am Yahweh who sanctifies Israel, when my sanctuary is amongst them forever more." ' 'Ezekiel 37:15-28*

It was while the Jews were captives of Babylonians that God sent an angel to Daniel with a very important prophecy.

**(Prophecy # 69.)** *<sup>12</sup> Blessed is he who waits, and comes to the one thousand three hundred thirty-five days. Daniel 12:12.*

Before I explain the significance of this prophecy, I first want to tell you what happened to the Land of Canaan, the land of Israel and Judah and the land of Palestine after the Jews were taken into slavery in Babylon in 586 B.C.

The Persian (modern-day Iran) king conquered the area, followed by the Greek empire, then the Selucids. Then the Jews took back control of Judah for a hundred years before it was conquered by the Roman Empire in 63 BC.

It was of course during the Roman occupation that Jesus Christ was born, lived, crucified, died and rose again from the dead. In 30 AD Jesus had given the prophecy of the destruction of the temple in Jerusalem.

**(Prophecy # 70.)**

*"But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then know that its desolation is at hand. 21 Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let those who are in the middle of her depart. Let those who are in the country not enter therein. 22 For these are days*



*of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23 Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who nurse infants in those days! For there will be great distress in the land and wrath to this people. 24 They will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations. Jerusalem will be trampled down by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. Luke 21:20-24.*

This destruction came upon the Jews when they revolted against the Romans, resulting in 70AD of the Romans destruction of the temple of Jerusalem, slaughtering a million Jews and taking the rest into slavery. The hatred of the Romans for the Jews was such that all maps of the Roman Empire were changed, and the land of Israel was erased and renamed Palestine.

Later, the Muslim Arab armies conquered the area, then the Seljuks and then a time of the Crusades when the Christians and Muslims occupied the land as they battled for control. Then came the Mameluke rulers from Egypt until that was conquered by the Ottoman Turkish Empire.

For nearly two thousand years (except for a brief time) the Jews had no homeland of their own, and lived dispersed among many nations around the world. They built synagogues and worshipped the Lord God of all creation. They had their Holy Scriptures, and they kept the Ten Commandments and laws of Moses given by God. Unfortunately, they often suffered persecution just for being Jews. But they held on to the prophecies and promises of God. They knew that one day God would return them to the land God promised to Abraham, Moses and Joshua.

By the late 1800's the Jews had suffered such oppression in Europe that many of them began to return to their homeland of Juda, which had been renamed Palestine by the Romans.

Some of the Jews formed a movement called Zionism, who wanted

to make Palestine, Judah their homeland and an independent Jewish nation once again. As of 1914, the population of Palestine was some 700,000 with 85,000 Jews and 615,000 Arabs.

When God sent an angel to Daniel with a very important prophecy, **(Prophecy # 69.)**

*<sup>12</sup> Blessed is he who waits, and comes to the one thousand three hundred thirty-five days. Daniel 12:12.*

Daniel was with the Jews in captivity by the Babylonians and wanted to know when the Jews would be able to return to their land once again. Daniel would not have known what this prophecy of God meant. With biblical prophecy a day is equal to one year, so 1335 days become 1335 years. If we look at the history of the Jews, there is nothing in the year 1335 of any importance that would make them happy as a nation. But here is the answer to the prophecy of God through His angel to Daniel back in 586 BC.

From 1914 to 1918 Great Britain was battling the Germans during the First World War, and they were also fighting against the Turkish Ottoman Empire to gain control over Palestine. During that time the British government was trying to gain support from various Arab groups and made promises of independence which they assumed included Palestine.

At the same time, the British government was also seeking support from the Jewish leaders in Britain and the USA to aid the British war effort. In 1917 this resulted in the British government making a declaration (known as the Balfour Declaration) supporting a homeland for the Jews in Palestine.

Dr Victor Pearce in his book *Evidence For Truth: Prophecy*, writes When the Turks fled out of Jerusalem in 1917, the newspapers there had this lunar date of 1335 at the top of the front page, and on the other side, the western date of 1917. It was in 1917 (1335 according

to the Muslim calendar) that a promised home for the Jews was realised in the land of Palestine (former Israel). Dr Victor Pearce. Evidence For Truth: Prophecy. Eagle Publishing. 1998. Guilford , Surrey. Page 263.

So, there we have the fulfilment of the prophecy of God, given in 586 BC and fulfilled exactly when God said it would be fulfilled in 1917 (1335), two thousand, five hundred and fifty-six years after the prophecy.

In the following years, Great Britain assisted the Jews in building their national home in Palestine. However, due to the hostility of the Arab population in Palestine, the British announced limits on the number of Jews wanting to live in Palestine. Due to the persecution of Jews in Europe, the number of Jews settling in Palestine continued to increase.

By 1936 the Arabs in Palestine were angry with Britain over its control of Palestine and allowing an unlimited number of Jews to settle in Palestine. This resulted in the Palestinian Arabs taking military action against the British rule in Palestine which lasted until 1939 and the start of the Second World War.

I would like to mention here something about the power of prayer. When the King and government of Great Britain called upon God for help in times of desperate need.

During the First World War of 1914 – 1918, the war against Germany was still ongoing, and in the spring of 1918, the Germans were determined to end the war, with a massive assault against the British Army in France.

The Germans broke through the Allied line and heavy casualties were sustained, and reserves were practically exhausted.

Following a National Day of Prayer, our defeat would be turned into victory.

There was a report from a Staff Captain from British Army Intelligence, who interviewed German prisoners following a supernatural intervention by God.

This is known as The White Cavalry of Bethune.

The Germans had launched a furious attack when suddenly they stopped firing at the British and began firing in an area of open fields.

Then for some unknown reason, the Germans threw down their arms and began to run away as if terrified. What did the Germans see?

At first, they could see what appeared to be cavalry riding on white horses, riding towards them. They began firing at them, but they kept on coming. They continued firing a hail of missiles and bullets, but nothing stopped them or their horses. Then they could see their leader on a horse a few steps in front of the cavalry. A man whose hair like gold shone in an aura around his head. By his side was a great sword, but his hands lay quietly holding his reins, as this huge white charger bore him proudly forward. And then great fear came upon the Germans, and they fled terrified.

Had the Germans defeated the British in the First World War, the Jews would never have their homeland of Israel. And so, when it looked like the British might be defeated, then Jesus Christ came with an army of angels to terrify the Germans.

Following the First World War, some Jews began to return to Jerusalem, but it was not long before the Jews in Europe began to face the worst persecution in their history when Hitler rose to power in Germany.

Then, during the Second World War of 1939-1945, we all know of Hitler's determination to destroy the Jews, and set up the death camps to kill every Jew they could find. Had Hitler defeated Britain and the US, Hitler would have made sure no Jew would ever have survived nor returned to Palestine or Jerusalem.

But, according to the prophecies and promises of God, God was going to call back His people to the promised Land of Canaan, and

back to Jerusalem. And out of the Second World War there came the creation of the nation-state of Israel. So, God was never going to allow Hitler to win the war.

During the Second World War of 1939-1945, The Church, of course, was praying for our Soldiers. But during the war, King George 6<sup>th</sup> and His government Called for Seven separate National Days of Prayer, because Britain and the British Empire were in real danger of being defeated by the Germans.

The first National Day of Prayer was called because in March 1940 338,000 British soldiers were hemmed in by the sea at Dunkirk. They had lost all their heavy artillery and had been pushed back to the coast, and looked like sitting ducks, waiting for the Germans to finish the job.

Back in England, the only reserve we had was the Dad's Army!

But following that National Day of Prayer, God calmed the sea, and thousands of boats of all sizes went back and forth to rescue the soldiers.

Some 12,000 soldiers were sadly left behind, shot, or taken prisoner, but everyone knew the success of this mission was down to an act of God.

The Second and third national days of prayer covered the time of what we call The Battle of Britain.

When the Germans had a much larger air force compared with Britain, the RAF shot down 180 German aircraft and repelled the attack.

Then again when the Germans launched their second attack of fighters and bombers, the RAF (still outnumbered by the Germans) shot down 185 German aircraft and repelled the attack.

Following these attacks, Air Chief Marshall Dowding said "I will say with absolute conviction that I can trace the intervention of God.. Humanly speaking our victory was impossible!

Six months later the King and government called for the fourth National Day of Prayer. And this was a time when Hitler was planning an invasion of England.

Three times Hitler had put off invading England and this was going to be his fourth attempt. But a great earthquake created waves with terrific gales which blew the German ships 80 miles off course. As a result, Hitler gave up on his plans to invade England and turned his attention to invade Russia.

Following the fifth National Day of Prayer, the next day the whole Italian fleet was sunk.

Following the sixth National Day of Prayer, Italy surrendered to the Allies the same night.

The seventh and final National Day of Prayer was called in the spring of 1944, and after the launching of D-Day was delayed several times it finally went ahead on the 5<sup>th</sup> of June – the last day possible or it would have been cancelled.

The Supreme Commander Eisenhower, later said “If there was nothing else in my life to prove the existence of an Almighty and merciful God, the events of the next 24 hours did it. The greatest break in a terrible outlay of weather occurred the next day and allowed that great invasion to proceed”.

**(Prophecy # 71.)** In Genesis 12:2-3 we read the following prophecy of God.

*I will make of you a great nation. I will bless you and make your name great. You will be a blessing. <sup>3</sup> I will bless those who bless you, and I will curse him who treats you with contempt. All the families of the earth will be blessed through you.”*

This was God’s prophecy to Abram, who became known as Abraham. As you read throughout the Holy Bible, and then down through history to our present day. Those who blessed Israel, were blessed by God, and those who cursed Israel (including those who make war against Israel) have been cursed by God.

Of the two world wars the world has ever witnessed, the two countries that both times defeated their enemies were Great Britain and the USA. Who both supported the return of the Jews back to Palestine, the Promised Land of Canaan. And helped the Jews establish the Nation of Israel and have supported them against their enemies ever since.

During the Second World War when Hitler's Nazi Germany was responsible for the murder of six million Jews. This just increased the number of Jews wanting to settle in their homeland of Palestine. Then in 1947, Britain invited the United Nations for proposals for the Jews and Arabs living in Palestine.

On the 29<sup>th</sup> of November 1947, the United Nations General Assembly agreed to divide Palestine into an un-named Jewish State and an un-named Arab state with Jerusalem being under UN trusteeship. While the Jews accepted the plan the Arabs rejected it and fighting began between the Arabs and the Jews.

On the 14<sup>th</sup> of May 1948 Israel declared itself an independent sovereign nation, and the following day the Arab armies of Egypt, Lebanon, Syria, Iraq and Jordan attacked Israel, but suffered badly and lost territory to Israel. This resulted in some 150,000 Arabs living under the rule of the Nation of Israel. Some 750,000 Arabs living in Palestine fled to neighbouring Arab countries to live as refugees, and also to live in parts of Palestine not occupied by Israel.

In 1949 because of the war and Israel occupying new territory, an Armistice border was supposed to be a demarcation line between Israel and those who went to war against Israel. It was not meant to be a permanent border, but in fact, it remained until 1967.

In 1950 Israel moved its capital from Tel Aviv to the western part of Jerusalem (in defiance of the United Nations resolutions). The

West Bank now became under the control of Jordan.

During the 1950's the Gaza Strip was occupied by Egypt and Palestinian Arabs who made attacks on Israel from the Gaza Strip. Egypt also took control of the Suez Canal which was an important route for international shipping from the Mediterranean Sea to the Indian Ocean. As a result, Britain and France attacked Egypt to take back control of the canal, and Israel invaded Egypt and occupied the Gaza Strip and the Sinai Peninsula. This led to the United Nations providing a peacekeeping force in the Gaza Strip and the Sinai Peninsula.

In 1964 a confederation of Arab groups formed the Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO) that worked to establish an Arab state in Palestine. They became known for using terrorist attacks and had their bases in neighbouring Arab countries to Palestine.

In June 1967 Israel was expecting Egypt, Syria and Jordan to attack Israel and launched their attack against them which resulted in Israel destroying the air forces of those three countries. Israel's army also defeated their enemy in a short war that lasted just six days.

As a result of this military action, Israel occupied Gaza, Golan Heights, the Sinai Peninsula and the West Bank which placed some one million Palestinian Arabs under their control who were hostile enemies of Israel.

This also resulted in the Jews being back in control of the whole of Jerusalem for the first time in 2555 years. This was a major event for the Jews and the fulfilment of a prophecy of God. In prophecy #100 from Leviticus 26:1-46. God has warned His people that the penalty for disobedience (with all the terrors that God foretold during that time), will last for 2555 years.

So, the history books tell us that the Jews were taken from Jerusalem into captivity in Babylon around 586 - 587 BC. But I think most



historians would agree that claiming 100% accuracy for any historic event over 2,500 years ago would be unrealistic.

But if we take 588 BC. as the year that the Jews were taken from Jerusalem into captivity and then add the 2,555 years to that date. We come to the year 1967, the very year that after 2,555 years the Jews were back in control of Jerusalem.

While the Jews had taken back control of Jerusalem the violence continued. Then on the 7<sup>th</sup> of October 2023, Palestinian militant group Hamas launched an attack on Israel on the border of the Gaza Strip. This attack was mainly on civilians of whom 1,200 people were killed and more than 250 taken to Gaza as hostages.

Israel then began a military campaign against Hamas in Gaza which led to the death of over 35,000 Palestinians, including many women and children. As a result of this war, many nations have pleaded with Israel to stop the war to save the lives of civilian Palestinian men women and children. This war has also increased anger and hatred towards the Jews from among the population and leaders of many nations.

What hope for peace is there in the land when so many people have been killed, injured, tortured, oppressed, and faced starvation and homelessness?

Fortunately, we can look back over four thousand years of the prophecies and promises of God. Just as every prophecy of God that has been fulfilled in the past, has been fulfilled exactly according to the perfect timing, plan and purpose of God. We can therefore be confident that the prophecies of God for the future will also unfold according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

The prophecies of God tell us of the Battle of Armageddon that is to come, and of war, death and destruction in the world. But human life will continue to survive and planet Earth will not be destroyed

by some cosmic catastrophe. Nor will the human race be eliminated by total nuclear war. Nor will some evil disease wipe out every man, woman and child.

For the prophecies of God tell us that Jesus Christ is going to return in great power. He is going to return to Jerusalem, and Jerusalem will become the capital city of the world. Jesus is NOT coming back to rule over a planet covered in nuclear ash or a planet void of all forms of life. Jesus is returning to establish the Kingdom of God on earth as it is in heaven, and that will be beautiful. It will be as God intended it to be. The whole world like the Garden of Eden, where God will dwell with us – Forever.

Here are the prophecies –

At the beginning of his ministry, Jesus announces the Kingdom of God is at hand, it is near, and they need to repent and be part of God's kingdom.

**(Prophecy # 72.)**

<sup>14</sup> *Now after John was taken into custody, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the Good News of God's Kingdom, <sup>15</sup> and saying, "The time is fulfilled, and God's Kingdom is at hand! Repent, and believe in the Good News."* Mark 1:14-15

Many people want to know when Jesus will return. This prophecy tells us the Gospel of the Kingdom will first be preached to all the nations. Well, after 2,000 of Christianity you would think that must target must be near completion.

**(Prophecy # 73.)**

<sup>14</sup> This Good News of the Kingdom will be preached in the whole world for a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come. Matthew 24:14

But before Jesus Christ returns the world will face tribulation and the Battle of Armageddon.

**(Prophecy # 74.)**

<sup>29</sup> *“But immediately after the suffering of those days, the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. <sup>30</sup> and then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky. Then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. <sup>31</sup> He will send out his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together his chosen ones from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other. Matthew 24:29-31.*

When Jesus returns in power and glory, he will destroy his enemies.

**(Prophecy # 75.)**

<sup>31</sup> *“But when the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. <sup>32</sup> Before him all the nations will be gathered, and he will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. Matthew 25:31-32*

All the kingdoms of this world will become the kingdoms of the Lord God of all creation and of His Christ Jesus

**(Prophecy # 76.)**

<sup>15</sup> *The seventh angel sounded, and great voices in heaven followed, saying, “The kingdom of the world has become the Kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ. He will reign forever and ever!”*

<sup>16</sup> *The twenty-four elders, who sit on their thrones before God’s throne, fell on their faces and worshiped God, <sup>17</sup> saying: “We give you thanks, Lord God, the Almighty, the one who is and who was; because you have taken your great power and reigned. Revelation 11:15-17*

The final two chapters of the Holy Bible are from the revelation of Jesus Christ. Here you will read of the new heaven and new earth that is to come. Of the presence of God with us and all that is evil destroyed, nowhere to be found in heaven or on earth. And then the prayers will be answered, that on earth it will be as it is in heaven.

**(Prophecy # 77.)**

*21 I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth have passed away, and the sea is no more. <sup>2</sup> I saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared like a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup> I heard a loud voice out of heaven saying, "Behold, God's dwelling is with people, and he will dwell with them, and they will be his people, and God himself will be with them as their God. <sup>4</sup> He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. Death will be no more; neither will there be mourning, nor crying, nor pain, any more. The first things have passed away."*

*<sup>5</sup> He who sits on the throne said, "Behold, I am making all things new." He said, "Write, for these words of God are faithful and true." <sup>6</sup> He said to me, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give freely to him who is thirsty from the spring of the water of life. <sup>7</sup> He who overcomes, I will give him these things. I will be his God, and he will be my son. Revelation 21:1-7*

2,000 years ago, Jesus Christ came announcing the good news of the Kingdom of God, but he didn't promise his followers an easy life. Jesus promised us a wonderful life in heaven, and when he returns at some point in the future. But no matter how difficult life may become on earth, God always promises to be with us as we remain faithful to Him.

## 8. THE CHILDREN OF GOD

Prophecies of God # 78-104

Let's begin this chapter with another prophecy of God. (**Prophecy # 78.**)

***To those who believed and trusted in Jesus Christ, he gave the right to become The Children of God. John 1:12.***

When I was an atheist and didn't believe in God. I had no idea if there was life after death and couldn't care less. Also, I believed the myth that no one had ever come back from the dead to prove there was life after death. My belief that once you're dead, you're dead, and there is no life after death, was based upon the limited knowledge I had as an adult at that time. Once I discovered that God did exist and that you could trust God that everything God said and prophesied was true. Then not only did I come to know that the history of humankind was unfolding according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God. I also came to know I could trust every word spoken by God and that includes what God has revealed about heaven and hell and life after death.

What I came to discover is that not only did Jesus Christ demonstrate the power and presence of God by raising three people who had died back to life again. He demonstrated his equality with God by prophesying his own death and coming back to life again, which he proved to his followers by appearing to them over forty days and teaching them about the Kingdom of God. I also came to discover that Jesus Christ is the only one who can forgive us our sins and offer us the free gift of God, of eternal life in heaven. This free gift of God was only made possible by Jesus Christ's sacrificial death on the cross. Jesus Christ died for us so that we may enter God's Kingdom of Heaven. Jesus Christ died on the cross so that you, dear

reader, may enter God's Kingdom of Heaven.

Now, some people believe in life after death, but they believe in some form of reincarnation. They believe that following death they are reborn again as humans or some other form of life. Some believe that hell does not exist and that everyone enters the heavenly realms.

No matter what anyone thinks might happen after death, it is what God says will happen after death that is important. Because the evidence has proven we can trust every word of God, and this is what Jesus Christ has said about life after death.

**(Prophecy # 79.)**

**14** *"Don't let your heart be troubled. Believe in God. Believe also in me. <sup>2</sup>In my Father's house are many homes. If it weren't so, I would have told you.*

*I am going to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup>If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and will receive you to myself; that where I am, you may be there also.*

<sup>4</sup> *You know where I go, and you know the way."*

<sup>5</sup> Thomas said to him, "Lord, we don't know where you are going. How can we know the way?"

<sup>6</sup> Jesus said to him, *"I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father, except through me. John 14:1-6*

Jesus said he was the way, the truth and the life. That means there is no other way to God except through Jesus Christ. Because Jesus is part of the Trinity of God (Father Son and Holy Spirit), it is impossible to come to God by excluding Jesus. It means that Jesus is the truth, and in this case, what he has said about coming to God is also true, and if anyone else tells you differently, no matter how well-intentioned, it is a lie according to God. It also means in Jesus and through Jesus there is life, eternal life. And if you reject Jesus Christ then you are rejecting eternal life with God in heaven, you will have chosen eternal separation from God, destruction, and death. Accepting or rejecting Jesus Christ as your Lord and Saviour

really is a matter of eternal life or death.

Jesus' disciples believed what he told them about life after death, because he raised three people from the dead and then himself rose from the dead after his crucifixion, death and being laid in a tomb. They believed what he said about life after death because, following his death, he appeared to them over forty days and told them about the Kingdom of God. They believed what he said about life after death because when the Holy Spirit of God came upon them, they experienced the power and presence of God in their own lives. We can believe in what Jesus said about life after death because we have the evidence of the prophecies of God and we can also experience the power and presence of God in our own lives if we want to.

Here are the three occasions in the Bible where Jesus brought the dead back to life.

A ruler's daughter was raised from the dead.

*<sup>18</sup> While he told these things to them, behold, a ruler came and worshipped him, saying, "My daughter has just died, but come and lay your hand on her, and she will live."*

*<sup>19</sup> Jesus got up and followed him, as did his disciples. <sup>20</sup> Behold, a woman who had a discharge of blood for twelve years came behind him, and touched the fringe of his garment; <sup>21</sup> for she said within herself, "If I just touch his garment, I will be made well."*

*<sup>22</sup> But Jesus, turning around and seeing her, said, "Daughter, cheer up! Your faith has made you well." And the woman was made well from that hour.*

*<sup>23</sup> When Jesus came into the ruler's house and saw the flute players and the crowd in noisy disorder, <sup>24</sup> he said to them, "Make room, because the girl isn't dead, but sleeping."*

*They were ridiculing him. <sup>25</sup> But when the crowd was sent out, he*

*entered in, took her by the hand, and the girl arose. <sup>26</sup> The report of this went out into all that land. Matthew 9:18-26.*

A son of the widow of Nain, raised from the dead.

<sup>11</sup> Soon afterwards, he went to a city called Nain. Many of his disciples, along with a great multitude, went with him. <sup>12</sup> Now when he came near to the gate of the city, behold, one who was dead was carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow. Many people of the city were with her. <sup>13</sup> When the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said to her, “*Don’t cry.*” <sup>14</sup> He came near and touched the coffin, and the bearers stood still. He said, “*Young man, I tell you, arise!*” <sup>15</sup> He who was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother.

<sup>16</sup> Fear took hold of all, and they glorified God, saying, “A great prophet has arisen among us!” and, “God has visited his people!” <sup>17</sup> This report went out concerning him in the whole of Judea, and in all the surrounding region. Luke 7:11-18.

Jesus raised Lazarus who had been dead for four days.

*<sup>11</sup> Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus from Bethany, of the village of Mary and her sister, Martha. <sup>2</sup> It was that Mary who had anointed the Lord with ointment and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother, Lazarus, was sick. <sup>3</sup> The sisters therefore sent to him, saying, “Lord, behold, he for whom you have great affection is sick.” <sup>4</sup> But when Jesus heard it, he said, “This sickness is not to death, but for the glory of God, that God’s Son may be glorified by it.” <sup>5</sup> Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. <sup>6</sup> When therefore he heard that he was sick, he stayed two days in the place where he was. <sup>7</sup> Then after this he said to the disciples, “Let’s go into Judea again.”*

<sup>8</sup> The disciples asked him, “Rabbi, the Jews were just trying to stone you. Are you going there again?”

<sup>9</sup> Jesus answered, “Aren’t there twelve hours of daylight? If a man



*walks in the day, he doesn't stumble, because he sees the light of this world. <sup>10</sup> But if a man walks in the night, he stumbles, because the light isn't in him." <sup>11</sup> He said these things, and after that, he said to them, "Our friend, Lazarus, has fallen asleep, but I am going so that I may awake him out of sleep."*

*<sup>12</sup> The disciples therefore said, "Lord, if he has fallen asleep, he will recover."*

*<sup>13</sup> Now Jesus had spoken of his death, but they thought that he spoke of taking rest in sleep. <sup>14</sup> So Jesus said to them plainly then, "Lazarus is dead. <sup>15</sup> I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, so that you may believe. Nevertheless, let's go to him."*

*<sup>16</sup> Thomas therefore, who is called Didymus, said to his fellow disciples, "Let's go also, that we may die with him."*

*<sup>17</sup> So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four days already. <sup>18</sup> Now Bethany was near Jerusalem, about fifteen stadia away. <sup>19</sup> Many of the Jews had joined the women around Martha and Mary, to console them concerning their brother. <sup>20</sup> Then when Martha heard that Jesus was coming, she went and met him, but Mary stayed in the house. <sup>21</sup> Therefore Martha said to Jesus, "Lord, if you would have been here, my brother wouldn't have died. <sup>22</sup> Even now I know that whatever you ask of God, God will give you." <sup>23</sup> Jesus said to her, "Your brother will rise again."*

*<sup>24</sup> Martha said to him, "I know that he will rise again in the resurrection at the last day."*

*<sup>25</sup> Jesus said to her, "I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will still live, even if he dies. <sup>26</sup> Whoever lives and believes in me will never die. Do you believe this?"*

*<sup>27</sup> She said to him, "Yes, Lord. I have come to believe that you are the Christ, God's Son, he who comes into the world."*

<sup>28</sup> *When she had said this, she went away and called Mary, her sister, secretly, saying, "The Teacher is here and is calling you."*

<sup>29</sup> *When she heard this, she arose quickly and went to him.* <sup>30</sup> *Now Jesus had not yet come into the village, but was in the place where Martha met him.* <sup>31</sup> *Then the Jews who were with her in the house and were consoling her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, saying, "She is going to the tomb to weep there."* <sup>32</sup> *Therefore when Mary came to where Jesus was and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying to him, "Lord, if you would have been here, my brother wouldn't have died."*

<sup>33</sup> *When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews weeping who came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,* <sup>34</sup> *and said, "Where have you laid him?"*

*They told him, "Lord, come and see."*

<sup>35</sup> *Jesus wept.*

<sup>36</sup> *The Jews therefore said, "See how much affection he had for him!"* <sup>37</sup> *Some of them said, "Couldn't this man, who opened the eyes of him who was blind, have also kept this man from dying?"*

<sup>38</sup> *Jesus therefore, again groaning in himself, came to the tomb. Now it was a cave, and a stone lay against it.* <sup>39</sup> *Jesus said, "Take away the stone."*

*Martha, the sister of him who was dead, said to him, "Lord, by this time there is a stench, for he has been dead four days."*

<sup>40</sup> *Jesus said to her, "Didn't I tell you that if you believed, you would see God's glory?"*

<sup>41</sup> *So they took away the stone from the place where the dead man was lying.* <sup>42</sup> *Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, "Father, I thank you that you listened to me. I know that you always listen to me, but because of the multitude standing around I said this, that they may*

*believe that you sent me.”* <sup>43</sup> *When he had said this, he cried with a loud voice, “Lazarus, come out!”*

<sup>44</sup> *He who was dead came out, bound hand and foot with wrappings, and his face was wrapped around with a cloth.*

*Jesus said to them, “Free him, and let him go.”*

<sup>45</sup> *Therefore many of the Jews who came to Mary and saw what Jesus did believed in him. John 11:1-45.*

When Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem for the last time with his disciples, three times he told them he would be murdered in Jerusalem.

**(Prophecy # 80.)**

<sup>31</sup> *He began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. Mark 8:31.*

**(Prophecy # 81.)**

<sup>30</sup> They went out from there, and passed through Galilee. He didn't want anyone to know it. <sup>31</sup> For he was teaching his disciples, and said to them, *“The Son of Man is being handed over to the hands of men, and they will kill him; and when he is killed, on the third day he will rise again.”* <sup>32</sup> But they didn't understand the saying, and were afraid to ask him. Mark 9:30-32.

**(Prophecy # 82.)**

<sup>32</sup> They were on the way, going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was going in front of them, and they were amazed; and those who followed were afraid. He again took the twelve, and began to tell them the things that were going to happen to him. <sup>33</sup> *“Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem. The Son of Man will be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes. They will condemn him to death, and will deliver him to the Gentiles. <sup>34</sup> They will mock him, spit on him, scourge him, and kill him. On the third day he will rise again.”* Mark 10:32-34.

These three prophecies tell us that Jesus Christ will be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes, but it will not be the Jews who kill Jesus. For they will deliver Jesus to the Gentiles (non-Jews) the Roman authorities who will mock him, spit on him, tie him to a post and be lashed with a whip of cords designed to cut the flesh – virtually to death, before nailing his body to a wooden cross and to die slowly and in incredible agony. But Jesus also prophesies that after three days he will be raised from the dead back to life again.

Interestingly, Jesus refers to himself as The Son of Man. Whenever he does so, he is referring to a prophecy that God gave to Daniel (c.600 BC). One like the son of man who is presented to God (the Ancient of Days) and to the son of man was given the kingdom of God.

**(Prophecy # 83.)**

<sup>13</sup> “I saw in the night visions, and behold, there came with the clouds of the sky one like a son of man, and he came even to the ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. <sup>14</sup> Dominion was given him, and glory, and a kingdom, that all the peoples, nations, and languages should serve him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which will not pass away, and his kingdom one that which will not be destroyed. Daniel 7:13-14

Following Jesus' crucifixion, death and being laid in a tomb, his followers were living in fear of the chief priests, the scribes, the Roman authorities, and anyone who might betray them. Just in case they came to crucify them also. We read at the end of Luke's gospel and then in Acts of The Apostles, of Jesus appearing alive among them for a period of forty days. He also proved himself alive by many demonstrations of his power and authority and by speaking to them of God's Kingdom. But his followers were still living in fear until the day of Pentecost came and filled them with the power and presence of God. Then not even the threat of torture or death could stop them from sharing the Gospel of Jesus Christ with the world.

And that is why today there are over 2 billion followers of Jesus Christ, some 30% of the population of the world.

Today, we have every confidence in trusting in the prophecies of God for the future, as we can read those prophecies of the past and see when they were fulfilled. We can if we wish experience the promise of God of experiencing the love, joy, peace, power, and presence of God as I have described in a previous chapter. Also, for those of us who are old enough, we are witnesses to a 3,400-year-old prophecy of God, given in 1,400 BC that after 2555 years in exile, the Jews would return to Jerusalem once again and become a nation once again. This is what happened in May 1948 when the Nation of Israel was born and in June 1967 when the Jews were in political and military control of Jerusalem for the first time in 2555 years. We are witnesses to the prophecies and promises of God!

An important point about the fulfilment of this prophecy of God, is that when Jesus spoke about his return at the end of this age. It will immediately follow a time when the nations of the world will come against Jerusalem. In the scripture below it names the place Megiddo, but in other translations, it is given the name Armageddon.

**(Prophecy # 84.)**

<sup>14</sup> for they are spirits of demons, performing signs; which go out to the kings of the whole inhabited earth, to gather them together for the war of that great day of God, the Almighty.

<sup>15</sup> *“Behold, I come like a thief. Blessed is he who watches, and keeps his clothes, so that he doesn’t walk naked, and they see his shame.”* <sup>16</sup> He gathered them together into the place which is called in Hebrew, “Megiddo”. Revelation 16:14-16

The point I want to make here is that for the kings (and armies) of the world to come against the Jews. The Jews had to be back in the land of Israel as one nation and back in control of Jerusalem as their

capital city. So, this would not have happened during the 2,555 years the Jews were in exile. But then in 1948, Israel became the nation of the Jews, in 1967 the Jews took control over Jerusalem, and in July 1980 Israel passed a law declaring Jerusalem as the undivided capital city of Israel.

So, it is only forty years ago since Jerusalem became the undivided capital city of Israel, which now means the Battle of Armageddon and the return of Jesus Christ could happen at any time. Also, in the year 2024 and the recent terrible death and destruction in the land of Israel and Palestine. With the nations of the world (United Nations) applying pressure against Israel, it is easy to see how things could quickly escalate into an end-times conflict. If you want to know how close we are to the Battle of Armageddon and the return of Jesus Christ, then keep watching the news about the Jews, the Nation of Israel, and the City of Jerusalem.

Considering that all the prophecies of God, all the prophecies of Jesus Christ are always fulfilled exactly as they say they will be. And considering that Jesus Christ came to tell us about the Kingdom of God. A message that he knew he would suffer such an agonizing whipping and death. It would be foolish not to take seriously the words Jesus spoke and prophesied about our eternal destiny. In **(Prophecy # 66.)**, you read of the prophecy and promise of God to his people that if they were obedient to his commandments then they would be blessed by God. But if they were disobedient to God, then there would be terrible consequences of slavery and death. In the same way, Jesus Christ offers us a choice. To be obedient to his commandments and enjoy eternal life in heaven, or we can be disobedient and face hell (Gehenna) and destruction. When Jesus spoke about hell, he made it sound terrible, a place to be avoided at all costs.

**(Prophecy # 85.)**

<sup>29</sup> *If your right eye causes you to stumble, pluck it out and throw it*

*away from you. For it is more profitable for you that one of your members should perish than for your whole body to be cast into Gehenna.<sup>30</sup> If your right hand causes you to stumble, cut it off, and throw it away from you. For it is more profitable for you that one of your members should perish, than for your whole body to be cast into Gehenna. Mathew 5:29-30.*

**(Prophecy # 86.)**

*<sup>41</sup> The Son of Man will send out his angels, and they will gather out of his Kingdom all things that cause stumbling and those who do iniquity,<sup>42</sup> and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Matthew 13:41-42.*

**(Prophecy # 87.)**

*<sup>49</sup> So will it be in the end of the world. The angels will come and separate the wicked from among the righteous,<sup>50</sup> and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Matthew 13:49-50.*

**(Prophecy # 88.)**

*<sup>8</sup> If your hand or your foot causes you to stumble, cut it off and cast it from you. It is better for you to enter into life maimed or crippled, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire.<sup>9</sup> If your eye causes you to stumble, pluck it out and cast it from you. It is better for you to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the Gehenna of fire. Matthew 18:8-9.*

Now we have the promises and prophecies of heaven, which Jesus reveals as something as to be the greatest desire of our hearts, to find and be accepted into God’s Kingdom of Heaven.

**(Prophecy # 89.)**

<sup>24</sup> He set another parable before them, saying, “The Kingdom of Heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field, <sup>25</sup> but while people slept, his enemy came and sowed darnel weeds also among the wheat, and went away. <sup>26</sup> But when the blade sprang up and produced grain, then the darnel weeds appeared also. <sup>27</sup> The servants of the householder came and said to him, ‘Sir, didn’t you sow good seed in your field? Where did these darnel weeds come from?’

<sup>28</sup> “He said to them, ‘An enemy has done this.’

“The servants asked him, ‘Do you want us to go and gather them up?’ <sup>29</sup> “But he said, ‘No, lest perhaps while you gather up the darnel weeds, you root up the wheat with them. Matthew 13:24-29.

**(Prophecy # 90.)**

<sup>31</sup> He set another parable before them, saying, “The Kingdom of Heaven is like a grain of mustard seed which a man took, and sowed in his field, <sup>32</sup> which indeed is smaller than all seeds. But when it is grown, it is greater than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in its branches.”

<sup>33</sup> He spoke another parable to them. “The Kingdom of Heaven is like yeast which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, until it was all leavened.” Matthew 13:31-33.

**(Prophecy # 91.)**

<sup>44</sup> “Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like treasure hidden in the field, which a man found and hid. In his joy, he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.

<sup>45</sup> “Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a man who is a merchant seeking fine pearls, <sup>46</sup> who having found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had and bought it. Matthew 13:44-46

**(Prophecy # 92.)**

<sup>47</sup> “Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a dragnet that was cast



*into the sea and gathered some fish of every kind, <sup>48</sup> which, when it was filled, fishermen drew up on the beach. They sat down and gathered the good into containers, but the bad they threw away. <sup>49</sup> So will it be in the end of the world. The angels will come and separate the wicked from among the righteous, <sup>50</sup> and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Matthew 13:47-50.*

Jesus wanted to focus people’s attention on the fact that physical death is not the end of human life, it should be the beginning of a wonderful new life in heaven. Where God has cast out everything and everyone who cannot or will not be obedient to his commandments. Yet it is quite clear that not everyone will be found acceptable by God. In the last chapter of The Revelation of Jesus Christ, we read of that final separation.

**(Prophecy # 93.)**

*<sup>10</sup> The devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet are also. They will be tormented day and night forever and ever.*

*<sup>11</sup> I saw a great white throne, and him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. There was found no place for them. <sup>12</sup> I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and they opened books. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup> The sea gave up the dead who were in it. Death and Hade<sup>l</sup> gave up the dead who were in them. They were judged, each one according to his works. <sup>14</sup> Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. <sup>15</sup> If anyone was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.*

**21** I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth have passed away, and the sea is no more. <sup>2</sup> I saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared like a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup> I heard a loud voice out of heaven saying, “Behold, God’s dwelling is with people, and

he will dwell with them, and they will be his people, and God himself will be with them as their God. <sup>4</sup>He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. Death will be no more; neither will there be mourning, nor crying, nor pain, any more. The first things have passed away.”

<sup>5</sup>He who sits on the throne said, *“Behold, I am making all things new.”* He said, *“Write, for these words of God are faithful and true.”* <sup>6</sup>He said to me, *“I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give freely to him who is thirsty from the spring of the water of life.”* <sup>7</sup>He who overcomes, *I will give him these things. I will be his God, and he will be my son.* <sup>8</sup>*But for the cowardly, unbelieving, sinners, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars, their part is in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur, which is the second death.”* Revelation 20:10-15, 21:1-8

Jesus Christ. Our Salvation.

Our eternal destiny, where we go when we die, heaven or hell is something that should be of vital importance to every human on planet earth. So how can we know for sure if we are good enough for God to allow us into His Kingdom of Heaven? And is there anything we can do if we fall short of his standard of acceptance?

Before Jesus began his ministry, God had sent John the Baptist to prepare the way for Jesus.

<sup>3</sup>In those days, John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying, <sup>2</sup>“Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand!” Matthew 3:1-2.

Then when Jesus began his ministry he came with the same message.

<sup>17</sup>*From that time, Jesus began to preach, and to say, “Repent! For the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.”* Matthew 4:17.

So why did the Jews need to repent? What did it mean, and what had it to do with the Kingdom of Heaven. Well, God gave the world his Ten Commandments through Moses some 3,400 years ago. You can read them in Exodus 20:1-17 and in Deuteronomy 5:6-22.

*20 God<sup>1</sup> spoke all these words, saying, <sup>2</sup> “I am Yahweh your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

*<sup>3</sup> “You shall have no other gods before me.*

*<sup>4</sup> “You shall not make for yourselves an idol, nor any image of anything that is in the heavens above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: <sup>5</sup> you shall not bow yourself down to them, nor serve them, for I, Yahweh your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children, on the third and on the fourth generation of those who hate me, <sup>6</sup> and showing loving kindness to thousands of those who love me and keep my commandments.*

*<sup>7</sup> “You shall not misuse the name of Yahweh your God, for Yahweh will not hold him guiltless who misuses his name.*

*<sup>8</sup> “Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. <sup>9</sup> You shall labor six days, and do all your work, <sup>10</sup> but the seventh day is a Sabbath to Yahweh your God. You shall not do any work in it, you, nor your son, nor your daughter, your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your livestock, nor your stranger who is within your gates; <sup>11</sup> for in six days Yahweh made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day; therefore Yahweh blessed the Sabbath day, and made it holy.*

*<sup>12</sup> “Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long in the land which Yahweh your God gives you.*

*<sup>13</sup> “You shall not murder.*

*<sup>14</sup> “You shall not commit adultery.*

<sup>15</sup> *“You shall not steal.*

<sup>16</sup> *“You shall not give false testimony against your neighbour.*

<sup>17</sup> *“You shall not covet your neighbour’s house. You shall not covet your neighbour’s wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbour’s.” Exodus 20:1-17.*

When someone asked Jesus to tell him the greatest commandment, Jesus replied.

<sup>35</sup> One of them, a lawyer, asked him a question, testing him. <sup>36</sup> “Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the law?”

<sup>37</sup> Jesus said to him, “*“You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’* <sup>38</sup> *This is the first and great commandment.* <sup>39</sup> *A second likewise is this, ‘You shall love your neighbour as yourself.’* <sup>40</sup> *The whole law and the prophets depend on these two commandments.”* Matthew 22:35-40.

Jesus had told him that the whole law of the Ten Commandments depended upon their keeping the most important commandments. That they should love God with all their heart, soul, strength and mind and love their neighbour as themselves. And the reason why Jesus came calling all people to repent is that everyone had sinned against God by breaking the commandments of God.

The reason why it is important for us as the Children of God to love God in this way, is because this is how everyone in heaven loves God, and how we will love God in heaven. So when we break the commandments of God, or when we fail to live our life according to the standard of God. This is why we repent, we apologise to God and ask for forgiveness, and then continue to live the way God wants us to live. Because our life on Earth – even if we live to be a hundred, is very short, compared to eternal life in heaven. And the meaning of our life on Earth is to prepare us for eternal life in heaven. This is why God calls us to repentance, not because God

wants to punish us, but because he wants to rescue us, to save us, so that we may enjoy life to the full in the presence of God, in the Kingdom of God.

This is what the God tells us.

**(Prophecy # 94.)**

<sup>10</sup> *For whoever keeps the whole law, and yet stumbles in one point, he has become guilty of all.* James 2:10.

**(Prophecy # 95.)**

<sup>23</sup> *for all have sinned, and fall short of the glory of God;* Romans 3:23.

**(Prophecy # 96.)**

<sup>23</sup> *For the wages of sin is death.* Romans 6:23

**(Prophecy # 97.)**

<sup>27</sup> *It is appointed for men to die once, and after this, judgment.* Hebrews 9:27.

These prophecies and these commandments of God were not just for the Hebrews, the Jews at the time of Moses and of Jesus. They were for all humankind, forever. Which means they apply to us today. And this is the standard of God by which God will judge everyone on Judgement Day.

**(Prophecy # 98.)**

<sup>10</sup> *For we must all be revealed before the judgment seat of Christ that each one may receive the things in the body according to what he has done, whether good or bad.* 2 Corinthians 5:10.

God knows we have failed to love God and to love our neighbour as ourselves. He also knows we have also broken the other commandments in thought word and deed. So, when God judges us by his perfect standard of the commandments, we will all have failed. It doesn't matter if we have failed a little or failed a lot, God's standard is 100% perfection. Just breaking a single commandment

of God just once in our lifetime is enough for us to fail the moral standard of God. As a result, God would cast us into the pit of hell awaiting our destruction. But instead, God did something wonderful. You will remember when Adam and Eve sinned against God and broke his commandment, and that to do so would result in their death. But instead of killing them, God provided a substitute animal that died in their place. It was as though the sins of Adam and Eve were transferred from them onto the animal, and the animal received the punishment of death.

Well, two thousand years ago, God did the same for humankind. Jesus Christ came to earth and called people to repentance for the forgiveness of their sins. When he was nailed to the cross and lifted up high for all to see. It was as though God transferred the sins of all humankind, for all time even from us today. And transferred our sins upon Jesus Christ on the cross. Jesus willingly became the sacrificial lamb of God, who took our sins so that we would escape the death we deserved and could enjoy eternal life in heaven. The following prophecy of God affirms that all of us, every single one of us have rejected the commandments of God and yet God has laid all our sins on Jesus Christ.

**(Prophecy # 99.)**

<sup>6</sup> All we like sheep have gone astray.

Everyone has turned to his own way;

and Yahweh has laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:6

**(Prophecy # 100.)**

<sup>16</sup> *For God so loved the world, that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life.* John 3:16

**(Prophecy # 101.)**

<sup>23</sup> *For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.* Romans 6:23.

**(Prophecy # 102.)**

<sup>6</sup> For while we were yet weak, at the right time Christ died for the

ungodly. <sup>7</sup> For one will hardly die for a righteous man. Yet perhaps for a good person someone would even dare to die. <sup>8</sup> But God commends his own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Romans 5:6-8

Do you remember me saying about when I decided to become a Christian? How I came to believe there was a God, but this God seemed a billion miles away from me, who had no interest in me at all. Yet when I read these scriptures and others of how much God loved and cared for me. Of how Jesus took the punishment for my sins that I deserved. Yet Jesus took lash after lash from the whip that marred his body and face making it a bloody mess. He surrendered his hands and feet to be crucified on the cross. And for God our Father in heaven and the angels watching the murder of his only son.

And Jesus did this willingly so he could fulfil each and every prophecy of God, and pay the price for our salvation from death and hell. This is how I discovered God who would love even me, who in the past I made jokes about Jesus Christ. I blasphemed the name of God and ridiculed those who followed Jesus. I broke the commandments of God in thought word and deed and had no thought at all of Jesus' sacrifice for me on the cross. And this is what Jesus has done for you, dear reader. Jesus took all your sins upon himself to die in your place, so that you should not perish in the second death but would have eternal life in heaven.

Some 3,400 years ago when God chose Moses to lead his people out of the slavery of Egypt, the people sinned against God and Moses by complaining, and this became a prophetic act of God.

**(Prophecy # 103.)**

<sup>4</sup> They travelled from Mount Hor by the way to the Red Sea, to go around the land of Edom. The soul of the people was very discouraged because of the journey. <sup>5</sup> The people spoke against God and against Moses: "Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to

die in the wilderness? For there is no bread, there is no water, and our soul loathes this disgusting food!”

<sup>6</sup> Yahweh sent venomous snakes among the people, and they bit the people. Many people of Israel died. <sup>7</sup> The people came to Moses, and said, “We have sinned, because we have spoken against Yahweh and against you. Pray to Yahweh, that he takes away the serpents from us.” Moses prayed for the people.

<sup>8</sup> Yahweh said to Moses, “Make a venomous snake, and set it on a pole. It shall happen that everyone who is bitten, when he sees it, shall live.” <sup>9</sup> Moses made a serpent of bronze, and set it on the pole. If a serpent had bitten any man, when he looked at the serpent of bronze, he lived. Numbers 21:4-9

What happened there was as a result of their sin against God they brought the penalty of death upon themselves. Some died in their sins and others were terrified of the serpents that would bite them because of their sins. Yet when they acknowledged their sins against God and repented and did what God told them to do. They looked at the serpent lifted high, the serpent that was a symbol of sin and the devil, and they were healed. Now we read of that prophetic act of God in John's gospel.

*<sup>13</sup> No one has ascended into heaven but he who descended out of heaven, the Son of Man, who is in heaven. <sup>14</sup> As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, <sup>15</sup> that whoever believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world, that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life. <sup>17</sup> For God didn't send his Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world should be saved through him. John 3:13-17.*

Today, many people are in the same position as those people who sinned against God and Moses. They were bitten by snakes and faced death. Then in realising their sins against God, repented of their sins and in obedience to God looked upon the snake for their



healing and salvation. We who have broken the Ten Commandments of God, the thought word or deed. We have broken the commandment to love God with all our heart, mind and strength. We have sinned against God, and this sin is like poison in our bodies waiting to kill us. When we understand how offensive to God our sins are to him, and the great sacrifice of God, of Jesus' death on the cross to pay the price for our sins. When we are truly sorry and are prepared to live our lives the way God wants us to live them. Then we symbolically come to the cross of Christ and look upon Jesus nailed to the cross. We believe and trust in the promises and prophecies of God. that God has transferred our sins onto Jesus, and he paid the penalty for our sins which is death.

This act of faith in Jesus Christ has set us free, the poison of sin in our body has gone. We have received forgiveness of our sins from God our Father in heaven and have the assurance of eternal life in heaven. And we become as children of God.

This is what God has written, has prophesied about eternal life in heaven.

The Good News of Jesus Christ is that eternal life in heaven is a FREE GIFT from God. we cannot earn it and we do not deserve it, it is a free gift. We cannot earn eternal life. Even if we gave all our possessions away, lived a life in constant prayer, and fasted until our belly button stuck to, our backbone. That would not qualify us for eternal life in heaven. It is a free gift of God. Why? Because God loved the world so much that He gave His one and only Son Jesus Christ, that whoever believed in Him should not perish but have eternal life in heaven. (John 33:16).

So, we cannot earn eternal life and we don't deserve eternal life. This is because as the Bible tells us. All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God. (Romans 3:23). We have all broken the commandments of God in thought, word and deed. We might think that on balance our good deeds have outweighed our bad deeds. But just like if we made an omelette with five eggs, if just one egg was rotten the whole omelette would be ruined and thrown away. It is the same with our sins. God's standard is the Ten Commandments and if we break just one commandment, just once, then we are guilty of breaking the law of God. As the Bible tells us. Whoever keeps

the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking it all. (James 2:10). the Bible tells us that. The wages for our sins is death. (Romans 6:23). Our wages is what we have earned by our actions, and our actions, our sins against God have earned us the penalty of death and eternal separation from God's Kingdom of Heaven.

So, on the one hand, God offers us the free gift of eternal life in heaven, but on the other hand, God tells us our sins have earned us death and hell! How then can anyone get into heaven when they die?

The Bible tells us that Jesus died on the cross to pay the penalty for our sins and to fulfil God's justice. On the third day he rose from the dead and is alive forever, and He offers the gift of eternal life to whoever will receive it. That is what Christians celebrate at Easter time.

The death of Jesus on the cross has repaired our relationship with God. Now we can come into His presence holy, pure and faultless. For God demonstrates His own love for us in this. While we were still sinners, Jesus Christ died for us. (Romans 5:8).

Sometimes it can be difficult to accept the reality of What God had done for us. Nor do we like to think of ourselves as being so evil that we deserve the penalty of death. But when we measure ourselves against the Holy law of God, then we realise that we have no defence. We can try and make all kinds of excuses for not believing in God and so we didn't realise our sins were so bad. But God who created humankind, who gave us life and health, loved ones, family and friends, who gave us every good thing in life. But we rejected God, laughed at the idea of God and considered the servants of God to be fools. Perhaps we also laughed at the idea of Judgement Day, heaven and hell. Yet for God, even though we were at times like enemies of God. God took pity on us for he created us in His own image, and He loved us.

God made a way so that humankind could enter the Kingdom of Heaven, and yet would prevent and destroy all that is evil from

entering heaven. God made a way so that we could enter heaven, but also made sure that no one could qualify on their own merit, and no one could earn their way in or buy their way in. The violent and evil cannot enter in, the rich cannot buy their way in and the self-righteous cannot ever be good enough to enter in. The only way we can enter the Kingdom of Heaven is through repentance to God for our sins, asking God to forgive us, and accepting the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross for our sins, and for Jesus to be our Lord and Saviour.

Imagine you have set off in your car on a journey to the beautiful Lake District in the north of England. It would be like arriving in heaven. Then an hour into your journey you see a road sign that tells you, you are just 25 miles from London. (I'm not comparing London to hell, but driving through London in heavy traffic can seem like hell!). If you keep on going in the same direction you are never going to get to the Lake District. What you have to do is admit to yourself that you have been going in the wrong direction, do a U-turn and head in the right direction.

This is exactly what we have been doing all our lives, heading in the wrong direction that day by day takes us further away from God and further away from heaven. If we want to go to heaven when we die, then we have to realise we have been going in the wrong direction, turn our lives around and head in the direction that God has mapped out for us.

We have to stop making excuses, stop listening to everyone else who is heading in the wrong direction, turn our lives around and start listening to God. Start listening to the one who loves us so much that He offered Himself as a sacrifice for our sins, so that we may enjoy eternal life in heaven. Look at all the evidence I have provided for you in this book. Evidence of the prophecies and promises of God (which include eternal life in heaven). Evidence of how you can personally experience the love, joy, peace, power, and presence of God in your life. What excuse can you give for not believing in God and His Christ Jesus? Think about it, for this really is a matter of eternal life or death for you.

My favourite passage of scripture from the Bible is taken from the Gospel of John, and that is what I will end this chapter with now. At the beginning of John's gospel, John writes of Jesus as being the 'word'. What this means is that every word that Jesus spoke was the same as the word from God. It also includes the prophecy of those of us who have received Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour as children of God.

### **(Prophecy # 104.)**

*1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup> All things were made through him. Without him, nothing was made that has been made. <sup>4</sup> In him was life, and the life was the light of men. <sup>5</sup> The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness hasn't overcome it. <sup>6</sup> There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John. <sup>7</sup> The same came as a witness, that he might testify about the light, that all might believe through him. <sup>8</sup> He was not the light, but was sent that he might testify about the light. <sup>9</sup> The true light that enlightens everyone was coming into the world.*

*<sup>10</sup> He was in the world, and the world was made through him, and the world didn't recognize him. <sup>11</sup> He came to his own, and those who were his own didn't receive him. <sup>12</sup> **But as many as received him, to them he gave the right to become God's children, to those who believe in his name:** <sup>13</sup> who were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. John 1:1-13.*

Just to make this clear for you, I will rephrase these scriptures.

Jesus was there at the beginning (before creation), for Jesus was with God and Jesus was God. All things were created through Jesus, and there wasn't anything made, that was not made without Jesus. Jesus was the light and life of the world, and the darkness of evil and oppression has not overcome the light and life of Jesus.

There was a man sent from God called John the Baptist, who came as a witness to the light and life of Jesus. To testify that Jesus is the Christ of God that everyone would believe in Jesus.

Jesus came into the world but his own people the Jews, rejected him.

But for all those who received Jesus, who believed and trusted in him. Jesus gave them the right to become children of God. children who were born not of blood, nor of the will of the desires of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but born according to the predetermined plan and purpose of God.

This is our eternal destiny, this is your eternal destiny (if you want it), to become children of God. Who no longer live in sin under the sentence of death, but we are free, inheritors of the Kingdom of Heaven, the Kingdom of God.

## 9. THIS IS THE MEANING OF YOUR LIFE

Prophecies of God # 105-110.

**(Prophecy # 105.)** *Jesus said. “I have come that you may have life, and have it more abundantly.” John 10:10.*

This abundant life Jesus promised, is not here on Earth in this present age, but the abundant eternal life in heaven. However, according to the prophecies and promises of God. There is a date and time prepared by God, for Jesus Christ to return to Earth, when the following prophecy of God will be fulfilled.

**(Prophecy # 106.)** *The seventh angel sounded, and great voices in heaven followed, saying, “The kingdoms of the world have become the Kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ Jesus, and He will reign forever and ever!” Revelation 11:15.*

Then all the poverty, injustice, inequality and evil in the world will have come to an end. Thank God. And the words of the Lord’s Prayer will be fulfilled –

*Our Father in heaven, hallowed be Your name. Your Kingdom come, Your will be done, on Earth as it is in Heaven.*

Heaven and Earth will become as it was in the beginning, just one kingdom, the Kingdom of God and His Christ Jesus. Then we – every man, woman and child, will know and experience the abundant and everlasting life of God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

I wish I could take you by the hand, and travel 100 years into the future, so you could look back on your life on Earth. I’m sure you would say, it was over far too quickly, even if you had lived until you were a hundred.

I’m sure many of you reading this book, would have wished they

had come to accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour, and become a Child of God at a much younger age. Because you will have wished you could have experienced the love, joy, peace, power and presence of God in your life, as soon as possible.

Also, as a Child of God, when we reflect upon our life, there will have been times we wish we had never thought, said and done, some of the things we thought, said and done. And we will all, wish we had done more for our God who loves and cares about us, and who though we didn't deserve Jesus Christ to die for our sins, so we could enjoy an abundant life. We are forever grateful to God for his grace and mercy.

In this chapter, I am going to share with you what it means to live your new life as a Child of God. Because how can you keep the greatest commandment of God, to Love God with all your heart, mind, soul and strength, if you don't know God? It would be impossible.

As the Children of God, those of us who live in the United Kingdom of Great Britain. We now have dual citizenship, because as Children of God, we have automatically become citizens of the Kingdom of God on Earth. As such, we learn to develop a whole new way of thinking, living, and being. And our first step as a Child of God, is to walk into a church and become part of the family of God on Earth. For it is through being a part of the family of God, and attending church regularly. That you can learn to know God and experience the love, power and presence of God in your life. By going to church and being part of the family of God, you will learn how to live your life in a Holy Communion and a Holy Communication with God, and if you don't go to church, you won't!

This is what you are going to learn in church, so you can experience

the fullness of a Holy Communion with God, and fulfil your eternal destiny on Earth, in preparation for eternal life in Heaven.

**(Prophecy # 107.)**

<sup>13</sup> *These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God. 1 John 5:13*

**(Prophecy # 108.)**

<sup>47</sup> *Most certainly, I tell you, he who believes in me has eternal life. John 6:47*

God tells us we become temples for His Spirit to dwell in us. Also, we become children of God and fellow citizens with the saints and of the house of God. What we have done by saying that prayer to repent of our sins and accept Jesus into our lives as our Saviour, is that we have stepped into the Kingdom of God on earth.

**(Prophecy # 109.)**

<sup>16</sup> *Don't you know that you are a temple of God, and that God's Spirit lives in you? 1 Corinthians 3:16*

Many years ago, when I made the decision to become a Christian and join the church, I decided to become a member of the Church of England. As a child, I had been attending a Methodist Sunday School, so I might have returned to the Methodist church. But during my time in the Royal Navy, I had attended services at the Church of England church, and the thing that impressed me was the service of Holy Communion. What impressed me most was the way the priest had such reverence in serving the bread and the wine (symbols of the body and blood of Christ) to the congregation.

This service of Holy Communion links our lives today with two important historical events of the past. The first is the event of 2,000



years ago when Jesus celebrated the Last Supper with his disciples on the night before his crucifixion and death. The second event goes back even further to the time of Moses, some 3,400 years ago.

When under the direction of God Moses led the Hebrews to freedom and into the wilderness, the people began to complain as they had no food to eat. So, God provided bread from heaven which became known as manna. God provided the bread of heaven to sustain his people through the wilderness until they reached the promised land of Canaan (Israel). You can read about this event in the book of Exodus in the Bible.

*16 They took their journey from Elim, and all the congregation of the children of Israel came to the wilderness of Sin, which is between Elim and Sinai, on the fifteenth day of the second month after their departing out of the land of Egypt. <sup>2</sup> The whole congregation of the children of Israel murmured against Moses and against Aaron in the wilderness; <sup>3</sup> and the children of Israel said to them, "We wish that we had died by Yahweh's hand in the land of Egypt, when we sat by the meat pots, when we ate our fill of bread, for you have brought us out into this wilderness to kill this whole assembly with hunger."*

*<sup>4</sup> Then Yahweh said to Moses, "Behold, I will rain bread from the sky for you, and the people shall go out and gather a day's portion every day, that I may test them, whether they will walk in my law or not. <sup>5</sup> It shall come to pass on the sixth day, that they shall prepare that which they bring in, and it shall be twice as much as they gather daily."*

*<sup>6</sup> Moses and Aaron said to all the children of Israel, "At evening, you shall know that Yahweh has brought you out from the land of Egypt. <sup>7</sup> In the morning, you shall see Yahweh's glory; because he hears your murmurings against Yahweh. Who are we, that you murmur against us?" <sup>8</sup> Moses said, "Now Yahweh will give you meat to eat in the evening, and in the morning bread to satisfy you, because Yahweh hears your murmurings which you murmur against*

him. And who are we? Your murmurings are not against us, but against Yahweh.”<sup>9</sup> Moses said to Aaron, “Tell all the congregation of the children of Israel, ‘Come close to Yahweh, for he has heard your murmurings.’”<sup>10</sup> As Aaron spoke to the whole congregation of the children of Israel, they looked toward the wilderness, and behold, Yahweh’s glory appeared in the cloud.<sup>11</sup> Yahweh spoke to Moses, saying,<sup>12</sup> “I have heard the murmurings of the children of Israel. Speak to them, saying, ‘At evening you shall eat meat, and in the morning you shall be filled with bread. Then you will know that I am Yahweh your God.’”

<sup>13</sup> In the evening, quail came up and covered the camp; and in the morning the dew lay around the camp.<sup>14</sup> When the dew that lay had gone, behold, on the surface of the wilderness was a small round thing, small as the frost on the ground.<sup>15</sup> When the children of Israel saw it, they said to one another, “What is it?” For they didn’t know what it was. Moses said to them, “It is the bread which Yahweh has given you to eat.”<sup>16</sup> This is the thing which Yahweh has commanded: ‘Gather of it everyone according to his eating; an omer a head, according to the number of your persons, you shall take it, every man for those who are in his tent.’”<sup>17</sup> The children of Israel did so, and some gathered more, some less.<sup>18</sup> When they measured it with an omer, he who gathered much had nothing over, and he who gathered little had no lack. They each gathered according to his eating.<sup>19</sup> Moses said to them, “Let no one leave of it until the morning.”<sup>20</sup> Notwithstanding they didn’t listen to Moses, but some of them left of it until the morning, so it bred worms and became foul; and Moses was angry with them.<sup>21</sup> They gathered it morning by morning, everyone according to his eating. When the sun grew hot, it melted.<sup>22</sup> On the sixth day, they gathered twice as much bread, two omers for each one; and all the rulers of the congregation came and told Moses.<sup>23</sup> He said to them, “This is that which Yahweh has spoken, ‘Tomorrow is a solemn rest, a holy Sabbath to Yahweh. Bake that which you want to bake, and boil that which you want to boil; and all that remains over lay up for yourselves to be kept until the morning.’”<sup>24</sup> They laid it up until the morning, as Moses ordered, and it didn’t become foul, and there were no worms in it.<sup>25</sup> Moses said, “Eat that today, for today is a Sabbath to Yahweh. Today you shall not find it in the field.”<sup>26</sup> Six

*days you shall gather it, but on the seventh day is the Sabbath. In it there shall be none.”*<sup>27</sup> *On the seventh day, some of the people went out to gather, and they found none.*<sup>28</sup> *Yahweh said to Moses, “How long do you refuse to keep my commandments and my laws?”*<sup>29</sup> *Behold, because Yahweh has given you the Sabbath, therefore he gives you on the sixth day the bread of two days. Everyone stay in his place. Let no one go out of his place on the seventh day.”*<sup>30</sup> *So the people rested on the seventh day.*

*<sup>31</sup> The house of Israel called its name “Manna”, and it was like coriander seed, white; and its taste was like wafers with honey.*<sup>32</sup> *Moses said, “This is the thing which Yahweh has commanded, ‘Let an omer-full of it be kept throughout your generations, that they may see the bread with which I fed you in the wilderness, when I brought you out of the land of Egypt.’”*<sup>33</sup> *Moses said to Aaron, “Take a pot, and put an omer-full of manna in it, and lay it up before Yahweh, to be kept throughout your generations.”*<sup>34</sup> *As Yahweh commanded Moses, so Aaron laid it up before the Testimony, to be kept.*<sup>35</sup> *The children of Israel ate the manna forty years, until they came to an inhabited land. They ate the manna until they came to the borders of the land of Canaan. Exodus 16:1-35.*

Then 1,400 years later, Jesus demonstrated the power and presence of God with many miracles. Two of these miracles involved bread. In Matthew 14:13-21 we read of how Jesus fed 5,000 people by miraculously multiplying five loaves of bread and two fish. Then in Matthew 15:32-39 Jesus again miraculously multiplied seven loaves and a few fish to feed 4,000 people. Later when the people were looking for Jesus, and probably looking to witness another miracle and a free meal, Jesus described himself as the bread of heaven.

**(Prophecy # 110.)**

*<sup>26</sup> Jesus answered them, “Most certainly I tell you, you seek me, not because you saw signs, but because you ate of the loaves, and were filled.”*<sup>27</sup> *Don’t work for the food which perishes, but for the food which remains to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give to you. For God the Father has sealed him.”*

*<sup>28</sup> They said therefore to him, “What must we do, that we may work the works of God?”*

*<sup>29</sup> Jesus answered them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent.”*

*<sup>30</sup> They said therefore to him, “What then do you do for a sign, that we may see and believe you? What work do you do? <sup>31</sup> Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness. As it is written, ‘He gave them bread out of heaven to eat.’*

*<sup>32</sup> Jesus therefore said to them, “Most certainly, I tell you, it wasn’t Moses who gave you the bread out of heaven, but my Father gives you the true bread out of heaven. <sup>33</sup> For the bread of God is that which comes down out of heaven, and gives life to the world.”*

*<sup>34</sup> They said therefore to him, “Lord, always give us this bread.”*

*<sup>35</sup> Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life. Whoever comes to me will not be hungry, and whoever believes in me will never be thirsty. <sup>36</sup> But I told you that you have seen me, and yet you don’t believe. <sup>37</sup> All those whom the Father gives me will come to me. He who comes to me I will in no way throw out. <sup>38</sup> For I have come down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me. <sup>39</sup> This is the will of my Father who sent me, that of all he has given to me I should lose nothing, but should raise him up at the last day. <sup>40</sup> This is the will of the one who sent me, that everyone who sees the Son, and believes in him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.”*

*<sup>41</sup> The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said, “I am the bread which came down out of heaven.” <sup>42</sup> They said, “Isn’t this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How then does he say, ‘I have come down out of heaven?’”*

*<sup>43</sup> Therefore Jesus answered them, “Don’t murmur among yourselves. <sup>44</sup> No one can come to me unless the Father who sent me*

*draws him, and I will raise him up in the last day.* <sup>45</sup> *It is written in the prophets, 'They will all be taught by God.' Therefore everyone who hears from the Father and has learned, comes to me.* <sup>46</sup> *Not that anyone has seen the Father, except he who is from God. He has seen the Father.* <sup>47</sup> *Most certainly, I tell you, he who believes in me has eternal life.* <sup>48</sup> *I am the bread of life.* <sup>49</sup> *Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness and they died.* <sup>50</sup> *This is the bread which comes down out of heaven, that anyone may eat of it and not die.* <sup>51</sup> *I am the living bread which came down out of heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever. Yes, the bread which I will give for the life of the world is my flesh."*

<sup>52</sup> *The Jews therefore contended with one another, saying, "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?"*

<sup>53</sup> *Jesus therefore said to them, "Most certainly I tell you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you don't have life in yourselves.* <sup>54</sup> *He who eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.* <sup>55</sup> *For my flesh is food indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.* <sup>56</sup> *He who eats my flesh and drinks my blood lives in me, and I in him.* <sup>57</sup> *As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father; so he who feeds on me, he will also live because of me.* <sup>58</sup> *This is the bread which came down out of heaven—not as our fathers ate the manna and died. He who eats this bread will live forever."* John 6:26-58.

The time of Passover celebration was an annual celebration remembering their time in Egypt. The Egyptian Pharaoh refused to let the Hebrews go into the wilderness to worship the Lord God of All creation. God had sent nine plagues upon the Egyptians and nine times the pharaoh had refused to let them go. Then God told the Hebrews to prepare to leave the following day. That night they were to have a meal of lamb and to daub the blood of the lamb on the doorposts of their houses. During the night God sent the angel of death to kill the firstborn child of every house. But whenever the angel saw the blood of the lamb on the doorposts the angel passed over that house. The following morning the Egyptians allowed the

Hebrews to leave Egypt. It is this Passover celebration, a celebration that God saved their children, set them free from slavery and led them to the promised land as the children of God. It is at this Passover celebration that Jesus and his disciples celebrated the Last Supper on the night before his crucifixion and death. Jesus became the sacrificial lamb of God. Through the sacrifice of Jesus and the shedding of his blood, we can receive the forgiveness of our sins, and freedom from the past way of life. As we journey through the wilderness of our years on earth to the promised Land of heaven, God sustains us with the bread of heaven, and the body and blood of Christ, in the symbols of the bread and wine of Holy Communion.

**(Prophecy # 111.)**

*<sup>26</sup> As they were eating, Jesus took bread, gave thanks for it, and broke it. He gave to the disciples and said, "Take, eat; this is my body." <sup>27</sup> He took the cup, gave thanks, and gave to them, saying, "All of you drink it, <sup>28</sup> for this is my blood of the new covenant, which is poured out for many for the remission of sins. <sup>29</sup> But I tell you that I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on, until that day when I drink it anew with you in my Father's Kingdom."*

*<sup>30</sup> When they had sung a hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives.*  
Matthew 26:26-30.

Every year for the past 3,400 years the Jews celebrated the Passover Festival, and for the past 2,000 years, Christians have celebrated Easter. We have also celebrated a service of Holy Communion in remembrance of Jesus' sacrifice for us, so that we may live and serve our God, in the Kingdom of God on earth.

So, when you take a sip of the communion wine, and eat the small piece of bread (or wafer) during the service of Holy Communion. You are celebrating the events of the power and presence of God in the world. But it is also as though God is pouring his love into your

mouth and into the depths of your body. It is a symbolic act of a spiritual reality, that God is in us and God is with us forever.

God has told us He will be with us and in us. In the service of Holy Communion, we can feel the small piece of bread or wafer, and the sip of wine (that represents the body and blood of Jesus), as it goes into our mouth and deep within us.

This is what God wants us to feel, both physically and spiritually. God wants us to feel this closeness to God through Jesus Christ not just so we can feel warm inside. Or so we can feel that God is up there in heaven watching down on us from a distance. God wants us to feel and act as though God is in us and with us at all times.

Many years ago I remember watching God TV and learning about the Brownsville Revival, where the power of God through the Holy Spirit was working in a wonderful way. I was tempted to fly to the USA and then make the journey to experience this for myself. But then God reminded me that it was the same God the Father, God the Son, Jesus Christ and God the Holy Spirit that was working in Brownsville, that was at work in my town, in my life, in me. The only difference was that I had to start believing it was true, and start living as it were true. And that is why I have experience so many wonderful healings, miracles, words from God for myself and others. That is why I have experienced so much of the love, joy, peace, power and presence of God in my life. Because I try to live as though God the Father, Son, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit and with me and in me. And this is why God can do the same for you, if you allow Him.

This is partly why Christians go to church every week. To worship God, to give thanks for all He has done for us. To be in a Holy Communion with God and our new family of God. To learn about God and to find opportunities to serve God. To find care and support when we need it, and to offer care and support to others when in need. To enjoy the friendship, fun and laughter together in the family of God.

It is also where we can learn to pray and listen to God for ourselves and each other. And we can learn to pray for healing for ourselves and each other. We can listen to the testimonies of those who have become Christians, and those who endured the trials and tribulations of life, and how God cared for them along their journey.

So, this is your new life. Your new life in the family of God and as a Child of God through Jesus Christ.

I would encourage you to do it now, to take the first step and receive Jesus Christ into your life as your Lord and Saviour, and immediately join a church where your new family of God can welcome you and help you grow in the faith of Christ.

You would be most welcome to visit Christ Church Mount Pellon, Church Lane, Halifax, HX2 0EF. This is where I experienced many of the wonderful experiences of God that I mentioned in Chapter 2. The Power and Presence of God. And where I now, as a retired minister, worship God as a member of the congregation. You would be made very welcome to visit us, and if you felt it was right for you, to join our friendly congregation.

Here is a prayer that you can say to God right now, and make a commitment to a brand-new life as a Child of God, with Jesus Christ as your Lord and Saviour.

#### Prayer of Salvation

My Lord and my God.

I admit I have been wrong in not following you.

I turn away from all my sin.

Please forgive me.

I believe that you paid the penalty

For me on the cross

And that you rose from the dead

To offer me a new life.



I commit myself to following you  
As my Saviour and Lord.  
I want your gift of eternal life  
Now and forever.

Help me to love you  
By the Power of the Holy Spirit.  
In Jesus name, I pray. Amen.

If you have just prayed that prayer, then I would like to welcome you into the family of God.

Someone once told me that beginning life as a Christian is like starting a new and exciting journey through life with God. And that is what it has been like for me. God has always been there for me through the darkest and most difficult times in my life. God has also been there for me, helping me to experience the most wonderful reality of miracles and the love, joy, peace, and presence of God, that I could never have imagined could have happened to me. I pray that you will also experience all these things in your new life with God through Jesus Christ.

Please send me an email to tell me of your decision to become a disciple of Christ, and let me know how things develop for you.

Yours in Christ

David Ramanauskas

Website – [www.ThisIsTheMeaningOfLife.co.uk](http://www.ThisIsTheMeaningOfLife.co.uk)



## About The Author – David Ramanauskas

At the time of writing this book – *This is The Meaning of Life*, on the 1<sup>st</sup> of January 2026, I am seventy years young! A retired minister, and still attending the same church – Christ Church Mount Pellon in Halifax, West Yorkshire, where I experienced my first supernatural encounter with God and his angels. It is also where I led the Listening to God meetings, and we experienced many of the wonderful experiences of the love, power and presence of God, that I mentioned in Chapter 2. The Power and Presence of God.

At the age of sixty-seven, I received a prophecy from God over my life. I had been diagnosed with pancreatic cancer, and within a short time I felt and looked like I was dying of cancer. But God prophesied to me – that God healed me before and would heal me again. That now was the time to begin my ministry. And the scripture from Psalm 118:17, I shall not die, but live and declare the works of the Lord our God.

Within three months the surgeon and doctors declared me completely free of cancer, but they didn't know why. Because God had healed me without surgery and without any medical treatment. It was a miracle healing of God.

The only reason God healed me, was to begin my new ministry. To tell as many people as I can about the wonderful works of our Lord God. To tell them the meaning of life on Earth, is to prepare for eternal life in heaven. To share the amazing evidence for God through Jesus Christ. And to reveal how to become children of God and know for sure they will go to heaven when they die.

This is why I wrote my book – *This is The Meaning of Life*, and why I have made it available as an eBook, (PDF eBook), so I can give it away for FREE.

